

# The Soldier and The Empress

**By: Dragon86411**

On her travels conquering other schools, Satsuki Kiryuin recruits another loyal and trustful subject into her elites: Kai Tadasuki. This subject is deeply in love with Satsuki, so he does the only thing he can do for her: follow her no matter the result. Now as the Vice-president of Honooouji Academy he will dedicate its body and soul to make Satsuki's big plan a success.

Status: ongoing

Published: 2020-06-29

Updated: 2021-06-25

Words: 73111

Chapters: 25

Rated: Fiction T - Language: English - Genre: Fantasy/Tragedy -  
Characters: [OC, Satsuki K.] Ryuko M., N. Jakuzure - Reviews: 4 - Favs:  
28 - Follows: 33

Original source: <https://www.fanfiction.net/s/13629280/1/The-Soldier-and-The-Empress>

Exported with the assistance of [FicHub.net](https://FicHub.net)

# The Soldier and The Empress

[Introduction](#)

[Dragonless \(Prologue\)](#)

[Lizard Among Pigs](#)

[Lioness' Prey](#)

[Scales and Fangs](#)

[The Four Winds and a Stormcloud](#)

[Intermission](#)

[The Golden Runaway](#)

[Lost and Found In the Fog](#)

[A Thousand Eyes](#)

[Nightmares and Dragons](#)

[Sandstorm of Emotions](#)

[Dunes of Questions](#)

[The Dead do Tell Tales](#)

[Dawn In the Mind of the Dragon](#)

[Bloodhound](#)

[Scales \(Intermission 2\)](#)

[Monumental](#)

[Chasing the Sun](#)

[Dragonslayer](#)

[Intermission 3 \(on here :3\)](#)

[Dragon Within](#)

[Beyond The Storm](#)

[Paint It Red](#)

[Coated In Gold](#)

[Fleeting](#)

## Dragonless (Prologue)

\*Tap\* \*Tap\* \*Tap\* \*Tap\* \*Tap\* \*Tap\* \*Tap\* \*Tap\*

Sanageyama is tapping on his leg. He and his four companions Ira Gamagoori, Houka Inumuta, Nonon Jakuzure and Satsuki Kiryuin sit outside a surgery room on the Naked Sol - a Nudist Beach battleship. The tapping is rhythmic, as if he would tap according to a heartbeat.

\*Tap\* \*Tap\*-\*Tap\* \*Tap\*-\*Tap\* \*Tap\* -\*Tap\* \*Tap\*

A good friend of all of them is now on critical condition. They found him half-dead defending a vault, they do not know how long he had been there alone fighting the COVERS. The rags he was wearing barely resemble the original uniform, now was all nasty with dirt, sweat and bloodstains, some of this bloodstains were completely dry.

\*Tap\* - \*Tap\* - \*Tap\* - \*Tap\* - \*Tap\* - \*Tap\* - \*Tap\* - \*Tap\*

They all noticed Sanageyama lowering the pace.

Gamagoori stood still.

Nonon bit her nails.

Inumuta was typing slowly on his computer like trying to match the tapping.

Sanageyama was so focused on the beat that did not noticed that his own foot was also following it.

And Satsuki, she looked the most relaxed yet she was the most worried of them all. Her second in command almost died once to save her life, now he put his life on the line again so they got a

fighting chance against the COVERS, and she also knows really damn well His feeling for her, which only made her worry even more.

\*Tap\* - \*Tap\* - \*Tap\* - \*Tap\*

"No, no, no NO NO NO NO! DON'T DO THIS TO ME, MAN!" the man inside the surgery room yelled soon between the ever slowing tapping.

The clattering of machines deafened the heartbeats of the ones waiting outside.

A single minute passed. And yet, every second, a part of their own soul left their body.

\*Tap\* - \*Tap\* - \*Tap\* - \*Tap\*

\*Tap\* -

Sanageyama stopped taping his leg, clenched his fist with that hand and he could be seen frustrated, like looking for something.

Gamagoori from his position let his arm fall to the ground and his knees almost, Almost touched the ground.

Nonon was completely paralyzed.

Inumuta tried to hide his tears behind his glasses.

Satsuki closed her eyes the moment Sanageyama stopped taping and, unconsciously, brought her hand to her chest and whether it was the sorrow or the pain, she could not feel her own heartbeat.

"Kai..." She said, and a single tear fell down her face.

Kai Tadasuki was dead.

# Lizard Among Pigs

AUTHOR'S NOTE: Just a couple of things before you start reading.

I won't be using subtitles for the vast majority of it, only when not everyone can 'hear' these characters is when i'll use them (Like Senketsu).

This fic is (most of the time) written in first person perspective to add to the immersion.

This is a Satsuki X Reader/Insert Fic, I just think that leaving the name blank takes away from the immersion. Also the 'good shit' will come in tiny bits here and there as well as some big ones so be patient.

The story will curve away from the anime later down the line, specially after the biggest event on the anime happens.

I appreciate feedback and grammar corrections greatly, as long as you ain't an asshole about it it'll be Okay. (I do spelling mistakes on purpose when I'm the one 'talking')

Originally uploaded to wattpad exact same way under the limitations on this site.

With all that said, please enjoy and tell me what you like and what you don't of it. Thanks for reading.

---

Satsuki Kiryuin

That's the name of the woman who stole my place as the student council president at my high school.

Back then i didn't rule the school out of greed or desire for power, but out of fear, i wanted everyone to stay away from me. So i recruited

followers and with them i made my dream school and it looked like my second year would be just as peaceful, that's when she showed up.

Long black hair, blue eyes and a stare that could kill. She completely destroyed the defences i built over the last year. Not even an hour past her arrival, many of my followers had left me for good and the ones who attacked her were already on the ground.

Satsuki Kiryuin

She shouted her name as demanded my presence. There was nothing else to do, i had to go out and face her myself.

Once i was alone in front of her, four other figures showed up, a pink haired girl, next to her a blue haired four eyes. To Satsuki's other side, a green haired punk with a bamboo sword and finally behind her a two and a half meters tall blonde buff man.

I had no chance against her, let alone any of her goons. However, I also had no reason to surrender. my weapon was a pair of claws made out of scrap that i slowly put on without taking my eyes off Satsuki. Either fear or something else kept me from looking away as to which one was, i got my answer soon after.

"Surrender!" The long haired woman in white uniform shouted at me, almost making me kneel from that alone. seeing that was not the case she seemed somewhat impressed.

I let out a groan, her shout did not beat me, but sure as shit left me tired.

"Impressive" She sounded way different now "You who ruled over this people with fear, you were right to do so, but you lacked something very important!" she went back to shouting, draining more and more energy out of me with every word.

"Hm, and here i thought this one was going to be some pushover... i need to reexamine the data" the blue four eyes spoke to no one in particular.

"Like a lizard under a hail..." the other girl with satsuki 'answered' to the glasses guy.

"Oh ho" the green haired punk said surprised while the big blonde man said nothing.

Satsuki Kiryuin

She took a step forward, a single step, then a blinding light appeared from behind her, i could not see it's origin.

"Come at me and if you survive, I will tell you what you lack!" She hit the ground with her sword and again more energy left my body.

I only had enough strength in me for one single attack, so i had to make it count.

With the last of my pride of the position i got for myself i managed to speak back at her.

"Then so be it!" thus i readied my weapon. I put all my strength on that attack, or so it seemed, it was a feint, when i got closer to her i would change direction, that's all i had to work with.

And she still stopped me effortlessly and calmly as when she first showed up. a strike from her sheathed sword to the stomach and with my Scrap Claws broken i fell to my knees in defeat. I barely manage to lift my head, i saw Satsuki at my left, three of the four goons she brought were far more relaxed than just a second ago, but the tall blonde one looked way more serious than anyone else.

Finally she spoke.

Satsuki Kiryuin

"Determination"

That was the last thing i heard before i fell to the floor barely conscious. With my defeat she was done here, so they were preparing to leave. And just as she gave a final speech to the ones who were still somewhat awake, a speech I could not hear. I saw her in the distance, that same blinding light i was now able to see perfectly through it. before i was almost lost to fatigue but now i was lost for words at her beauty, why was it so different now from the one that beat my ass just a moment ago?

She wasn't, the moment i laid my eyes on her i felt it, but i didn't realized it yet...

"I want to follow her." That's all that went through my mind after that, i had to act fast, i had to move. I managed to get some strength in my hands and rip some grass, as i slowly raised my head once again, i realized that they weren't that far from me as i originally saw, probably a trick of the fatigue.

I was now kneeling, and all five of the spectators were in complete silence, i didn't know why then, but now i know it was them acknowledging the strength i had to get up after one of Kiryuin's strikes. I remember the blonde man smiling if just a little, the glasses guy typing at a computer and the punk was definitely happy, the pink girl was looking at Satsuki, like waiting for her to say something.

Next step was to get up, i just knew it. So i tried and tried and tried until i lost count of how many times i tried but failed. i felt pathetic.

Then in the endless white noise i heard a voice, Satsuki's.

"GET! UP!"

Inexplicably i sprang up and got on my own two feet, stumbling a little, but i did not fall i was not going to fall ever again.



Somehow now I could clearly see the faces of the four, the big man was now all smiles, the four-eyes was typing even faster, the other two were still the same but the punk was looking at Satsuki this time. She was smiling, i was lost to her sight again but now i was breathing heavily trying to regain consciousness.

"Well Done Tadasuki! You have proven yourself! Join me at Honnouji Academy!"

That's when i pledged my undying loyalty to Lady Satsuki, The woman that stole my heart.

From there on out i expressed my love for her in form of loyalty, hoping once all this is over, once her little sister and father are avenged, once Ragyo is defeated maybe, just maybe i... no, i'll restrain myself from such thoughts for now.

"Tadasuki, sir, is everything in order?" Omiko Hakodate, two star leader of the tennis club asked me, her superior, to check if everything was in ok after i inspected it.

"Yes, there seems to be no problems with your equipment, Sanageyama should be here soon for the last adjustments... by the way, what happened to the new girl?"

She told me what happened to the new girl after one of her club members didn't showed to practice the day before.

"I see, she'll most likely show up again... ah! whatever, it's Sanageyama's problem now (and i still cannot follow what happening inside of her pretty head... i'll ask Nonon later... no that sound like a bad idea...)" with that i left the tennis court to examine other clubs and their equipment, such is my duty as vice-president... well that and follow her orders.

## Lioness' Prey

Back at the Elites headquarters, everyone was there but Sanageyama. I gave Inumuta the results of my inspection and he went back to typing like a maniac, Satsuki with her usual cup of tea, Nonon gave me that smug look she always does and Gamagoori was silently watching the school grounds from the window and ignored me completely.

"I think there's nothing else for a while now, would you mind if i pay a visit to Shiro, Lady Satsuki?" i said while sitting on one of the chairs in the counter Inumuta was but decently farther from him, from this spot i could see everyone else, specially Satsuki.

"This has to do with another one of your experiments, Tadasuki?" she saw right through me.

"Guilty as charged"

"You're brutally honest sometimes y'know Lizard" Nonon teased "If i didn't knew any better i'd say you trying something weird" I gave Nonon a deadly glare, unfazed by it she continued "But i do know better, either way i don't think you'd want miss this match" and she pointed her baton towards the Tennis ground.

I barely noticed, but Satsuki's expression turned somewhat angry for a moment before going back to her usual composed self.

"Hm?!"

That new girl, Ryuko Matoi, was having a tennis match against Omiko Hakodate, wearing that exhibisionist outfit, Senketsu... Fresh Blood... i think she called it, a Kamui. A sailor uniform made entirely out of life fibers, the students can only withstand a uniform made from 20 to 30% life fibers on them. So how was this nobody who dared speak to Lady Satsuki so openly capable of wear that uniform!

"(Who are you? Ryuko Matoi!)" my anger was obvious.

The match was going extremely well for Omiko, one point away from winning, yet inside my heart i could tell she was going to lose. of course i did not want that. After seeing how happy she was with her new two stars goku uniform.

But then the Matoi girl started to use that scissor as a racket, that's when Satsuki stepped in and forced Sanageyama to continue the match. That look on her face, that was the look she gave to losers, thus i assumed Omiko was done for.

Sure enough soon after there she goes a stripped Omiko flying through the tennis court. Not anything i haven't seen before, but i still felt bad for her.

Two years ago, when Omiko Hakodate was a first year no star student, i became interested in her and we dated for a couple of months. However, one day out of the blue Lady Satsuki demanded our break up. I was confused as to why... but i obeyed without doubt and put an end to our relationship. I was and I'm still stupidly entranced by Satsuki's everything. So while i was sad that i had to leave Omiko, i am Satsuki's loyal right hand. The feelings i had towards Hakodate were akin to a wildfire, spreading everlasting throughout my heart, but Satsuki, she is my sun. There was no real way to compare them even if i tried.

"(!)" I swear for a second i saw Lady Satsuki smile at Omiko's defeat, seriously, what is going on inside her mind?! I have made several things before that defied logic... and common sense. but none of them prepared me for Satsuki's inner workings, and i loved it.

Then she went on and challenged Matoi, the battle ended quickly since Ryuko managed to escape. After Matoi ran away she demoted Hakodate to a no-star, kinda harsh but whatever, she can do whatever she wants. That was the end of the day at Honnouji Academy.

The rest of the day was relatively uneventful, I had my daily arm wrestle with Gamagoori, i always win when Lady Satsuki is present. Updated Nonon with the latest dirt i had on the Two Stars students. Sanageyama was angry and didn't talked too much. Then i had long talk with Shiro and Inumuta about a guinea pig for the 5 star goku uniform experiment, unlike my other experiments, this one was approved by Lady Satsuki and i was barely involved in it.

A storm was coming, i could tell. which is ironic since tomorrow was gonna be sunny all day. Of course next day was sunny as all hell and i got more work to do... great, supervise more stuff, get even more dirt on students for Nonon and i can't even be there for the five stars uniform test. Then again that isn't a bad thing at all... if Matoi Ryuko goes around making a mess i get to be the first and probably the last one of us to fight her, I'm sure Sanageyama will be pissed, but that didn't stopped me while we were out conquering other schools.

Surprisingly the day went on without any incident other than the five start experiment being a failure.

Isshin Matoi, Ryuko's father who she believes was killed by Satsuki. I do not believe that to be the case in the slightest, yet i somehow know there is some sort of relation between all of them.

I got a little late to the HQ since i went to have a little talk with Omiko about her fight with Ryuko. Surprise surprise, Satsuki had left for her house to retrieve a very special set of clothes, undoubtedly she won't need my help there, though it would have been nice to be the first one to see her in that outfit... "crap i can't do it..." i'm worried about what that thing will do to her... then again, if Matoi could wear Senketsu, then perhaps... no, definitely...

First thing in the next morning, Satsuki already had a bunch of one stars students making some sort of arena, waiting for Ryuko Matoi. When we all were summoned she gave us the details of today's performance. We are not to interrupt her battle with Matoi. Well at least i assumed that was she said...

I could not take my eyes off her, that Kamui, Junketsu... Purity... , it looked like it had two eyes for a scarf, honestly i was both scared and mesmerized, she wore it so well, yet it could not help myself but worry about what will happen...

Needless to say that was happened right after Matoi arrived was overwhelming, the shockwaves, the one stars flying all over the place... the way she looked... no, i must keep those thoughts out, there's a time and place for those.

Finally after while Matoi fell to the ground and Satsuki gave an interesting speech and just as she was gonna land the killing blow...

"Mankanshoku? What the Fuck is she doing there?" The bowcut no-star gave an interesting speech in front of Satsuki, i was angry, but i could not interrupt.

It is with great sadness in my heart that i kind of understood what she was trying to say, even if she herself didn't... -Some limits oneself must break in order to unleash the full power of a Kamui- or something along those lines, i still don't fully understand the Kamuis.

From there on out i was constantly suppressing my urges to jump in the battle, but that would be: Against her orders and an Insult to her Ambitions, so i'm not gonna do that. Not that i was the only one like this either way.

That final clash though, the first time in a while that i've felt like i had to grab onto something for dear life. After that, Matoi collapsed and i never felt this angry in my entire life, i almost transformed my Assault Regalia and started to beat that New girl to death. But i had to wait until Lady Satsuki stopped talking. The click of her heels, man i love it when she does them, my rage almost banished in its entirety. Satsuki declared that Matoi was to defeat all the two-stars students that go after her if she wants the rematch.

"(I don't know what she is thinking making Matoi fight the two stars, but i swear i'll find out!)" I did not know the why, but i damn sure

knew how to act after that.

With that the day ended, Ryuko left and Satsuki went back up for a cup of tea. I stayed up late figuring out the punishments and rewards in order to get the two stars students to constantly fight Matoi. the Punishment was obvious: Demotion to no-star. the Reward were a bit more tricky though.

"If you beat her You get to be a Three Star... that sure sound like a lot... huh?!" i noticed a presence behind me, a powerful one.

"What exactly are you doing here this late, Kai?"

"Lady Satsuki!" i bowed as soon as i realized that she was behind me, what i hadn't realized, was that she was wearing only a bathrobe.

"So?"

"Sorry, i was looking at the preparations for the Matoi vs All, i got a couple of suggestions from Nonon..." I was still bowing, i could not see her face, but i could tell she had Bakuzan with her.

\*Sigh\*

"(Huh? did she just...)"

"Don't over do it, when the time comes i want all of you in proper form"

"Then should i continue tomorrow?" I could barely think straight, i'm not sure ill be able to say anything coherent if i lifted my face to fully see her, also, it was weird that she had not asked me to raise my head yet, lucky me i guess.

"I don't think you will need to, do Nonon's suggestions, i believe i'll like them... You' did not conducted another experiment on yourself today?" She sounded very serious but i could swear i heard her voice crack.

"I... Did not" I could not lie to Lady Satsuki, not that i had any real reason to.

The experiments i had done were as a proper guinea pig for the four and five star Goku uniforms. it was extremely painful to say the least, but me and Shiro made a discovery, it was still nothing worth telling Lady Satsuki. The one thing i did hide from her, was Izanami, a wristblade made with the same material as Bakuzan. I kept it secret because i don't want Ragyo to find out, that said, either or both of them probably already know i have it with me, so it doesn't matter at this point

She then sighed again and

"Raise Your Head"

"(SHIT!)" i did what she told me too, but slowly, i wanted to slowly adapt to this sight that probably me and a ver other few will ever see.

"Your eyes..."

"Is... there something wrong with them?"

"They are really red" her voice was far too soft, am i dreaming?

"then i guess i did overdid it today... (She is concerned about me? i may as well be the happiest may alive right now!)" Just as i thought i could not be any happier, she gently grabbed my face and i naturally blushed.

"Hm" that and a smile, i was okay if i died right there and then. I unconsciously grabbed her hand that was on my face as if i was trying to not let her go.

We both stood there silently for almost a minute, but my self restraint kicked in and i was the one who broke out from it first. I wanted this moment to last forever, but there were orders i had to fulfill. I gently grabbed her hand, pushed it away from my face and placed it on

Bakuzan. That's when i saw her blush, the Lioness of Honnouji, blushing, i must've died and was now in heaven.

"I must take my leave *Satsuki*..." She turned around, took her hand to her chest and spoke as the normal Lady Satsuki.

"Yes, Go."

"At once, Lady Satsuki" i bowed, slightly this time and went away to my room an the Academy... "(What. Just. Happened.)" was all that was in my mind after flopping tired onto my bed.



## Scales and Fangs

The day after, i walked into the meeting room, If was as if nothing had happened, perhaps it was for the better to think it was all a dream.

The following days were full of Demotions from the two stars who were easily defeated by Matoi, but also there were many new clubs being formed, at the very least i get the short end of the stick on that one, not that Gamagoori needs any help with the rest of it.

I used all the free time i got from no having to supervise as much clubs to think about what Satsuki wanted by letting Matoi loose and to Try and convince myself that what happened that night was all a dream, the latter was unachievable. I wanted it to be real, of course.

Lost in thought walking around the halls of Honnouji i get a call from Shiro Iori.

"You gotta see this!" He was a closet mad scientist, it was both scary and perfect for my plans.

"What you mean Shiro? Surely it can't be..."

"But it is, come see her, i believe we are not the only ones that will be pleased with this."

Izanami, that's what he meant to show me. I rush my way to the secret vault below the sewing club, which was in itself, a secret laboratory below Honnouji. A couple of password doors and a scan later i reach the vault, Shiro is already there, typing away at a console in front of the Shackled Izanami.

"Whoa there! What are all those Chains, eh Iori?" He did not realized i had just entered, damn, he's just like Inumuta when this stuff happens... "Oy, Iori! SHIRO!"

Finally he noticed me and stopped typing to turn around and look at me, the look on his eyes, like those of a madman.

"This is a fascinating development! Kai!" he was excited so he shouted.

"Care to explain what happened?" I pretend i'm not startled by his mad scientist lines to see if that get him to calm down.

He fakes a cough "Anyway, by using both Matoi's Senketsu and Lady Satsuki's Junketsu data i got from inumuta i managed to increase Izanami's power."

"I guess those are good news, care to give me more details?"

"By numbers alone Izanami should be stronger than Bakuzan, oh the chains were there because i also added some more Life Fibers into her mix and it didn't stopped rattling."

"Well that doesn't sound ominous at all..."

"Regardless, i've run the tests, and she's ready to be equipped."

That was quite the change in tone, he was now back to his normal self. I trust Shiro, and if he doesn't think this'll kill me, then so be it.

"Then how about i try it on right now?"

"I thought you'd say that, so please proceed as we practiced before"

The station looked like a giant sewing machine, well, that's what it is after all. i pu down my uniform in it, right sleeve below the needle. There was a big tube connecting this station with the place Izanami was chained. Just as Shiro was doing some last adjustments, he pressed a button and slowly Izanami was being moved towards the station.

He had a briefcase with him, he sat waiting for Izanami to arrive and opened it, a couple of cloths. I assume they are Four Star ones, like

my own uniform, for the Union with Izanami.

"I assume you are ready for the toll she will take on you..."

"Of course, I can't and won't Leave Lady Satsuki to walk any path of alone."

"Thought so" he then looked towards the chained Izanami that had just arrived -"Then time to work"- He did not touched Izanami, a machine placed it in place to be sewn to my Uniform. It didn't took too long for Shiro to finish, but he did seemed somewhat tired.

/Red lightning started to emerge from where Izanami was placed towards my uniform and I heard the voice of someone in my head, telling me to kill again my madman logic kicked it "(Oh, You trying to take over me Izanami?! Bullshit i'll let you, Only Lady Satsuki orders ME around! You. Are. MY. Weapon!)" I scream as Shiro watches silently./

"How does she feels? Oh, i also took the liberty of changing it a little, so if you feel something different apart from the blade then don't panic."

I put my uniform on. Izanami was heavy, really heavy, maybe it was because i was exhausted. Fighting her inside my mind was really tiring. The uniform looked exactly the same, That's Shiro's magic for ya, he does a really good job at keeping appearances. Now to test this new toy.

The Three stars in my my right gauntlet and the one on the left lit up a little. The Uniform and the jacket i had on my shoulders fell apart and took a new form.

"Yottsu-boshi Goku Seifuku! Totsugeki no Sō: /Duelista!"/ (Four-Star Goku Uniform! Assault Regalia /: Duelista)

An tight looking armor was in place of my uniform, it looked like a combination between a Knight's armor and reptile scales alongside a

tail. The helmet looked like a dragon's head that had four stars for eyes, instead of the normal human one. Big boots and gauntlets like Gamagoori's along with a Rapier for the finishing touches. Silver and Cyan, Shiro knows me well.

"I trust you like the changes."

/"Indeed" i looked at where Izanami should have been, it was hidden inside the gauntlet. "Now let's see if she is a good girl and behaves properly..."

Focusing my thoughts on Izanami to get it out, I make the rapier disappear. After a couple of seconds. Red lightning started to emerge from where Izanami was placed towards my uniform and I heard the voice of someone in my head, telling me to kill Shiro. Once again my madman logic kicked in.

"(Oh, You trying to take over me Izanami?! Bullshit i'll let you, Only Lady Satsuki orders ME around! You. Are. MY. Weapon!)" I scream as Shiro watches silently.

Izanami bursts through the gauntlet. A Silver blade made out of Life fibers, A red lightning surrounds it and i feel my armor shake a little.

"Yes, Upgrade complete!"/

"Can confirm this will be a nice surprise to Lady Satsuki once things start to move, good work Shiro"

"Thank you for letting me work on it, sadly i don't believe i can make more of them anytime soon, i'm gonna be busy with the increasing amount of new 'Club Leaders' "

"Tell me about it..."

We laugh it off and return make our way back up. Secretly hoping that Lady Satsuki will let me take care of the Matoi Girl myself, so i

can show her what happens when you mess with with The Empress of Honnouji.

On the elevator though, i recall seeing something interesting in Shiro's personal quarters, a wedding dress.

"Oy Shiro"

"What now?"

"Who's the lucky girl?"

He blushes slightly "I have no idea what are you talking about..."

"Sure you don't, no need to worry, as long as Nonon doesn't found out by herself i'll keep it a secret."

"Fine... It's for... Lady Satsuki..."

"WHOA!"

"I've always wanted to handmade one of those..."

"Handmade?! damn you're good... is it finished?"

"Nah, it's a side project as of right now, with all the stuff i have to do at the Sewing club i barely have time to work on it... but i do i want Lady Satsuki to wear the dresses i make when her big day comes... that has been my dream since i've known her."- There was a short yet incredibly awkward silence -"Oh, just for the record, i'm not interested in her, i just want to be the one that get to make the dress for her..."

"Thanks i guess..." i look away from him trying to avoid eye contact, he sighs without looking at me and then smiles. "(I guess he also knows now...)" seconds later the doors open and we finally return to the Academy.

# The Four Winds and a Stormcloud

Endless, dark, head feels light. Ground finally appears. Satsuki is there in her kamui, wielding Bakuzan and pointing it at someone.

Her mouth moves but no words come out.

Then someone starts to take shape, a man, not too big, not too small. He is grabbing where his right arm that has been chopped off with his other hand, preventing blood loss. He is on his knees while Satsuki points Bakuzan at him. His face is just a dark silhouette. The man speaks.

"It's been a blast..."

Satsuki raises Bakuzan over her head, aimed towards the man's neck. She takes the slash with all the strength she has.

As Bakuzan is about to reach the man's neck, his face was recognizable now. Head raised, eyes closed and smiling. Kai Tadasuki, that was his current name.

"Goodbye... Satsuki..."

His head flies off detached from the rest of his body..

Another not so dark room, a big bed could be made out from the dim light. Someone was sleeping on it, a pale beauty with really long black hair, Satsuki Kiryuin. One second she looks like she peacefully and deeply asleep, the next one, she got up screaming and in cold sweat.

"KAI!" Reaching her hand forward, she felt like a month worth of sleep just left her body.

Mr. Soroi, her butler, knocked on the door asking if everything was fine, he was an old man that has been a long time with Satsuki, he

did not ran in instantly since he knows Lady Satsuki can defend herself just fine, he going in would actually make her be at a disadvantage.

"Should i call for him Lady Satsuki?!"

"Everything is fine Soroi (Kai Tadasuki, why does your death haunts my dreams?)"

The butlers stood silent outside her room for a while, expecting an order from Satsuki. When he felt like it was too long he decides to break the silence himself.

"Milady, should i prepare a fresh blend?"

"Please do, also Soroi, what time is it?"

"Is almost 4 in the morning Milady."

"Today is No-Late day... then i will be out in a moment"

"Understood, and Milady, are you sure you don't want me to get Master Kai, you sounded quite disturbed when you woke up..."

"Thanks for your concern Soroi, but he is probably already waiting outside in the meeting room with Gamagoori, besides i don't really want to see him right now..."

"I see, please pardon my insistence"- The butler bowed outside the room by force of habit -"if you allow me I will be leaving to make the tea"

"You can go, also tell them i don't want to be disturbed unless is something really important."

Soroi bowed once again and with an "Understood" he left for the meeting room where the elite four gather, Gamagoori had just left.

---

"Man, do i really need to be here?" Kai complained to Gamagoori.

"Tadasuki! You better not slack off!"

"I won't, jeez, do you ever know what a joke is,\*Sigh\* let's skip the formalities and just start, i'll be waiting in the camera room when you get back."

"Very well, though i don't like you skipping stuff, i'll let it slide for now and go"

"Yeah, after all we do have to put extra work to keep the Matoi girl in line... !" I heard something in the back of my mind.

"Something the matter?"

"Nah, get going, I'll sound the siren, just to make it somewhat oficial"

"Then i'll be going, do remember our daily match, it's always a pleasure to see how Lady Satsuki enjoys them!"

"Of course Ira, now go, or you may not catch them."

Gamagoori was a little confused about who he was going to 'catch,' but he knew it had something to do with the way i "see" the future, predicting how some stuff will plan out. Honestly, I don't really know how i do it, but it sure as shit has been useful a handful of times.

Just as the elevator doors shut and Gamagoori started to descend, Soroi came out of the door at the very back of the room, that door led to Satsuki's personal chambers.

"Oh, Soroi, good day, is Lady Satsuki awake already?"

"Good day to you too sir, she is up, though she asked not to be disturbed today, do not worry, she will still make her appearance at the students that make it in time today."

"Something happened?"



"I believe she will tell you personally once she decides to come out."

"Very well, thanks Soroi, i'll be leaving for the camera room... (What happened?)"

"Have a good day sir"

"... Tell her... tell her she can talk to me if she wants to..." I reluctantly say to Soroi.

"Will do sir" he bowed and started heating water for Satsuki's tea, shame i can't taste anything, so i cannot really understand its appeal... no time for self pity, time to 'work.'

The No-Late day was one of my favorite events we had, while i had to deal with that girl Ogure, i always ended up having a good time seeing how many of the students failed to reach the School in time. This time was even more enjoyable, that bitch Ogure was nowhere to be seen and the Matoi Girl was having a bad time with the traps while wearing her pjs instead of her Kamui. Funniest shit i've seen in a long ass while.

Later that day, Gamagoori showed up and asked where Ogure was, i told him i didn't know and he went away after examining the Honno City model in the camera room. There was something odd about it, but i couldn't give half a shit, i was dying of laughter.

Luckily, i guess, Matoi was able to make it in time after crashing one of the thingies the two and uppers stars students ride onto the school, seen crazier, although... i'm probably gonna be the one who's gonna fill the paperwork for its repairs... whatever, i had fun, is worth it.

By the end of the day i was informed of the awful half-assed 'plan' Ogure had about dethroning Satsuki, good thing Gamagoori found out first, if it were to been me, then i don't think anyone would have listen about her anytime soon, though i was probably gonna do the same he did, just to not get Satsuki angry when she finds out.

"(Now that i think about ti, she was with Matoi, ugh... hopefully Ira doesn't notices... damn i might have been trying too hard to get her out of my mind...)"

Satsuki gave her speech at the students that survived and quickly returned straight to her own chambers, i was a little annoyed that i could not see her more, but she's the one calling the shots, so i can't really complain.

All five of us were chilling in the Meeting room, Satsuki still did not came out and Soroi politely stopped us from going in. Inumuta was typing on his computer, Sanageyama was pretending to be asleep with a magazine covering his face. Gamagoori watched the grounds with Nonon who was eating sweets.

"Oy, Lizard, do me a favor and get me some more chips from the counter will ya?"

"Yeah, yeah, i still don't know what you like bout' this stuff Nonon"

"It's tasty! Baka Tokage!" (Stupid Lizard)

"Now now, no need to be mean, you know he can't taste any of them"- Inumuta slides into the conversation- "That said, have you tried them? maybe you'll like the texture."

"Yeah, i tried them a lot back then, got tired of them really damn quick!"

"Interesting..."

"C'mon Mr. Lizard, i'm starving!" Clearly annoyed she yelled at me, when she is in a bad mood she gets all bossy... more than normal... but what is she mad at?

I throw her the bag of chips and she immediately lays down on her bean bag chair, looking at the empty grounds of Honnouji. Inumuta goes back to typing.

"What about you Sanageyama, you also don't look too relaxed, is it bout' the Matoi girl?"

"Oh ho, Mr. Monkey got a thing for her?" Nonon's tone changed dramatically and she turned her head to Sanageyama.

He 'woke up' taking the magazine off his face.

"I was doing real good not being annoyed by Jakuzure, y'know that Kai"

"So was i, now, spill the beans"

"Whaddya mean annoyed? Baka Saru!" (Stupid Monkey)

"I'm only interested in fighting her, I plan to ask Lady Satsuki for a chance soon..."

"Well that's bold, you sure you wanna say that out loud just like that?"

"I don't think you wanna stop me, Gamagoori is patient and he doesn't seem too interested in our chat right now, Inumuta wants Kamui data so he won't go after her just like that"

"You're right on that one" Inumuta spoke his mind while still typing.

"and Jakuzure is not even listening"

Nonon wasn't even looking at us anymore, she was just grumbling between each chip she took to her mouth.

"I guess you right, but what exactly tells you i won't stop you?"

"Will you?"

"Nah, it'll be fun watch how she kicks your ass, haha!"

"What an optimistic Vice-Prez we have, don't we?"

Everyone else ignored him and he let out a sigh before going back to "sleep."

\*Blip\* \*blip\* a little alarm sounded and everyone looked at the source, Inumuta.

"Hm, What's this? i got reports of someone wreaking havoc in the two-stars district"

"Odd, don't we have peoples for that?" Nonon barely interested expressed herself while shoving more chips on her mouth.

"It seems that this time it's a fellow from outside Honno City, i got his face, right now i'm looking for data on him."

I heard something again in the back of my mind, but this time louder, i still could not figure out what it was saying.

"Got him, uh?!"

"What is it Inumuta?" I got a little impatient.

"See for yourself."

"Daisuke... Kogane!"

Everyone jumped when they heard that name.

"Oy Oy! Ain't that your name from long before we met you, Mr. Lizard?!"

I remember that name, i only became Kai Tadasuki during my last year in middle school... there was only a handful of faces who knew that name besides the ones in this room and once i saw the photo Inumuta had examined i was certain.

I remember the last time i had been this angry, it was when Matoi defeated Fukuroda and his blood landed on Satsuki's face. I would have ended her right there and then given the order.

The face i usually had of friendly superior to the Elite Four was replaced with the one that got me the seat right behind Satsuki. The face of a Predator, looking for his prey.

"Yes, yes it was Jakuzure... His real name is, Izanagi Kogane, my brother."

# Intermission

Hey How's it going, i'm Dragon8641 writer of this fic, and i'd like to know how y'all liking it. Obviously from last chapter onwards the story will take heavy turn away from the anime and i wanna know what you think about some things as well as letting you know a couple more.

First: The style of writing, i've noticed that other fics use what i call "Subtitles" when the characters speak, i've "graduated" from using those a long time ago, so do not expect them in the future.

Second: The name, How did the "canon" name of the Protag sounds to yall? i had some others in mind, like Towa Tadasuke and Izami Towasaki, but i felt like Kai Tadasuki fit well enough without forcing the "Lizard" onto his name. Again, you can feel free to change his name when youre reading, but do tell me if you like it or not, or if you use another one. Fun fact: Kai's first name comes from the character Kaiman from DoroheDoro, a Man with a Lizard head.

Third: Story, yes is still a fic about Satsuki X Reader/insert, but that will come in: small parts here and there and, obviously, a big one at the end. Also "Self Restraint" is a big part when i was making Kai, is it hitting the right spots?

Fourth: For clarification purposes,

- "This is for Dialogue, duh"

- (This is for thoughts being part of the story)"

- (This ones without the quotation marks are translations or comments if necessary for context)

- The "thoughts" outside of those ones are inner monologue, since so far is been almost entirely on first person after all.

- " / " These are for a change in POV (different from Wattpad since it doesn't let me have the bar)

Hope it was no too confusing since i did not say what they were at the start, sorry for that.

Fifth: The japanese, how was it the Rōmaji used, like it? i feel like it gives it a different feeling, how about you? (I do apologize to anyone if something i write comes off as offensive when writing Rōmaji, i know jack for japanese, using tools like a eng-jap dictionary and Google Translate)

Sixth: Future, I'd love to read what do you think will happen in the future of this fic, now that Kai is getting his first arc. As well as what do you think of him as an actual Character.

Now i'm gonna write Kai Tadasuki's canon look, i really wanted a drawing here, but i'm bad a drawing so... here i go: being about 5'8ft Kai uses a White vest and shirt below it together with a Bright Cyan tie, the suit jacket that he should be wearing is hangin on his shoulders like a cape (see Kanji Tatsumi's or the One piece admiral guys), he has pair of silver armor Gauntlets and Boots that are totally part of the Goku uniform... also white pants whose interior is light blue. Hair color to taste and voila: Kai Tadasuki. Bright Cyan is yours truly's fave color thank you very much for asking.

I will answer questions if any and read suggestions. Hope you're enjoying reading it as much as i am writing it. Once again thank you for Reading this small intermission, now we goin back to MC kicking ass and maybe Ryuko will step in?! Take it away!

# The Golden Runaway

"Izanagi? Like, the Creator God Izanagi?"

"Exactly"

"Well that doesn't sound pretentious in the slightest" Nonon was playful, but instead she used sarcasm, she was more serious than before.

"Is he strong?" Sanageyama asked.

"If he's around the two-star district and we were notified of him, he should" Gamagoori answered Sanageyama.

"Haven't seen him in a long while, tell Lady Satsuki i'll might do some noise soon..."

"I'll get him first if you slack off Kai!" Sanageyama declared.

"Stay out of this Sanageyama, this one is mine" With a glare, Sanageyama's face twisted as he had seen a monster, Nonon hid behind her hat and Inumuta was typing looking too closely at the screen.

"I'm gonna assume you know he let himself get the picture taken in order to lure you out" Inumuta told me, he was right of course.

"That's why i'm going to fight him at Honnouji, with you all here if, and only if, it becomes a pain, i'm sure i'll have your back up."

"It's Only Natural!" Gamagoori said without stuttering.

"If i get a go at this asshole, then sure man!"

"I don't really feel like it, but then again, i can use this to let some steam out..."



"Be sure to get me some mean data if you will Tadasuki"

"Don't get your hopes up, i plan to end this quickly."

The sound of doors being swung open struck the room

A \*Click\* and a blazing light came from the back of the room.

"Isn't this quite the opportunity? Tadasuki"

"Lady Satsuki" The elite four said as they bowed deeply, I only bowed slightly.

"It is as you say Lady Satsuki, I wish to see to this matter myself, with your permission of course"

"You don't need it for this enemy, do as you please, just don't lose!"- She slammed Bakuzan in the ground -"Listen up Elite four! You will aid Tadasuki on this mission as he sees fit!"

"Of Course Lady Satsuki!" Four voices were heard in unison.

"You have my undying gratitude Lady Satsuki" Now I bowed deeply.

"Start whenever you want, Tadasuki"

Thankfully it was the end of the day, I excused myself and left to my own chambers in the Honnouji tower. I wanted to meditate a bit before facing Izanagi again, after all, I was damn sure I killed him last time I saw him.

---

Tadasuki left the room the room, saying he was gonna get some rest.

"(Like c'mon! you can't just get everyone all worked up and leave like that!)" Jakuzure pouted as she flopped in the couch. "Lady Satsuki... is there some other reason Kai wants to fight this guy so badly? i get

that they were brothers and his family was kinda... not good, but is far too unusual to see him this angry..."

"It's quite the long story Nonon, though i feel like you may want listen to it anyway" Satsuki smiled both on the inside and outside.

"Yay! we get to know more bout' Mr. Lizard!" Nonon sat facing Satsuki.

"I'm also interested in hearing that!" Sanageyama got excited.

"Please do not miss any details Lady Satsuki" Inumuta bowed on his seat while a blank document was on the screen of his laptop.

"He avoids most of the questions about his past... i'm curious as well Lady Satsuki" Everyone, even Gamagoori, got comfortable for Satsuki to start telling them about Kai Tadasuki's past, from the time he was Daisuke Kogane.

"The Kogane Family were a 'company' that were onto many shady business, Eventually they were all exposed by REVOCS and annihilated" After taking a sip of her tea, Satsuki started the history.

"Interesting..." Inumuta said under his breath as to not interrupt Satsuki.

"The head of the Kogane household was an awful man, his name doesn't matter now, what matters is that he had one legitimate son, Izanagi. As well as many other illegitimate ones"

"That's where Kai goes in... ah! my apologies Lady Satsuki..." Sanageyama realized he was being rude.

Satsuki ignored him and continued

"One day a woman, probably a sex worker, joined the Kogane Household by declaring that a nameless kid was also the head's son, that kid had about five years and still didn't had a name, worthless pigs, all of them..."- She sounded really angry, yet with a

sip of tea she calmed down and continued calmly once again. -"That kid, became Daisuke Kogane."

Everyone was speechless, but Satsuki did not stop there.

"When that happened the Kogane were still in their prime, yet Daisuke was treated like a slave, even if he had their family name, he was still not recognized as one of them, that is how he became to hate people when we first found him, remember?"

"True, his background was a little cloudy but by what we had it was clear that he loathed the students at his high school and people in general..."

"Indeed, but that is still a couple of years after he became Kai Tadasuki... Daisuke Kogane received a minimal amount of education compared to Izanagi and was raised by the gold digger who brought him into that mess"

"What horrible people" Nonon was really invested into the story.

"Until one day, a bit after the start of middle school... he was sent in as a pit fighter against other kids in an illegal underground arena" She stopped the story to get another cup of tea.

"!" Inumuta stopped typing, Gamagoori had a surprised face on him, Jakuzure almost choked on the sweets she was eating and Sanageyama was deadly serious and silent.

"Wait, that's just awful!"

"Indeed it is Jakuzure, now..." Satsuki took another sip of the now full cup "He wasn't supposed to be the one to fight, it was Izanagi. The mother of Daisuke was the one who sent him in so she could win a bet."

"What a bitch!"

"Truly a bunch of pigs, also... the battles were to the death..."

Everyone stayed silent out of shock.

"The kids wore mask that showed whose house they belonged to, so his father could not tell it wasn't Izanagi. Then the bell ringed."

---

A sand pit, a blade stuck at the very center. Two masked kids: one red, one blue neither older than 12 were facing at each other.

\*ding ding\*

The Red masked one starts running at the blade and gets a jump start.

The Blue mask starts running a bit later after realizing there is no more weapons on the arena.

The blinding lights made it impossible to see any of the sick people who watched this as entertainment.

The Red mask got first to the blade, but it was buried too deep, so the blue mask caught up landing a sucker punch on the red mask and sending him away from the blade.

The blade loosened up a little from their struggle, they both had one hand on the blade and the other punching away at their enemy.

Finally the blade came out of the ground, in Red's hands, Blue was unable to get away in time, and received a very shallow cut through his chest from side to side. Little blood spurt out as the crowd cheered.

Blue grasped the wound, while it wasn't deep it did hurt really bad.

"(Sand... Overhead Swing... Blood)"

Now about eight feet apart, Red points the sword at Blue, as if he was declaring victory.

Blue does a "come on" sign at Red.

Red charges at Blue with the sword really overhead.

Blue gets his guard low, so he is not seen grabbing sand from the ground.

Six feet away.

Four. Blue throws the sand at Red's face, Red's grip on the sword visible falters and Blue quickly follows up with a punch in the very center of the face. Red contorts from the hit, his body moving forward while his head goes backwards.

Red falls in the ground, the sword follows, falling really close to him, he is no longer moving.

\*Ding ding\*

The match is over.

"And the Winner is BLUE from Kogane House! Make sure to watch out when redeeming your bets!" they announced it like this, since it was usually just a representative of their house, not someone directly tied to them.

---

"Huh? weren't the battles to the death?" Jakuzure interrupted Satsuki, everyone else had this face of 'Yeah!' on them, as they agreed with Nonon.

"They were rigged of course, if it was Daisuke the one who fell that day he would have, undoubtedly, died."

"... I see..." The look on Nonon's face became really gloomy as she just accepted that fact.

Satsuki took yet another sip of tea "Fights like this keep coming, since Daisuke's mom was furious and made him fight to gain the

money back... and he did, he had nowhere else to go after all..."

---

The familiar sight of the yellow sand, the blade stuck on the ground, the lights shining like the sun. Blue mask had now a ten win streak and the eleventh was just archived. Sadly, he had gotten used to this.

This fight in particular almost took the mask off Red, the blade struck the mask but stopped a bit after reaching the skin of Red's cheek. Blue took the sword away, it had blood on its tip, Red was still breathing, he was not dead. that was the last match of the day.

Daisuke the Blue mask now returned to his school, where he spent his time alone, since his last name haunted the other students.

Then there's this one guy, he was not too scared of Daisuke for unknown reasons, but every now and then tried to talk to Daisuke, failing every time since Daisuke hated people.

This one guy, came to school with a gauze on his left cheek, covering stitches.

That's when it hit Daisuke the hardest, he was not just in any normal school, it was a chicken pen. He had at some point fight some of the people in this very classroom at that arena, and those disappearances... could only mean one thing. Sure he hated people, but they all were in a similar spot as him.

---

"That's horrible!" Gamagoori could not help but interrupt Satsuki to express his feelings.

Satsuki took a last sip of her cup, handed it to Soroi and resumed her story without wait.

"By the time Daisuke realized he had to leave, he was at his last year in middle school. It was on his 30th victory that he put his plan

into motion"

Once she received another cup of tea from Soroi, Satsuki explained Daisuke's plan to escape.

"He needed: Money, an Escape Route and a Weapon. He got the money by betting on himself when he fought, the Escape route was relatively easy, he just had to pretend take a shortcut when going to school and disappear, then he got the weapon..."

"The knife in his room..." Sanageyama jumped in.

"Indeed... The plan started and everything went well, too well..."

---

Walking through the back alleys, Daisuke alone walked like he usually does. He could not help anyone else at his school, he did not believe in heroes.

The skies darkened and the wind blows strong.

Daisuke is just a couple of turns away from freedom. Just one more turn left and he'll be gone for good.

Izanagi Kogane, there he was, with a smug look on his face, playing with some baseball, waiting for Daisuke.

"(Jacket... Thunder... Knife...)"

"Hey! little brother!"

"Izanagi... what do you want?"

"Me? nothing, but what do YOU want? that's the real question."

"Like you care"

"Indeed, but this time i do actually, i've been having the time of my life, since father thinks is myself the one that made all that money

from him"

"He what?!"

"Oh, you didn't knew? you momma was sending you instead of me to that arena, i watched safely from the vip area."

"You bunch of assholes" Daisuke was furious at Izanagi but he did not raised his voice.

"Don't you worry, they won't miss you" He stepped out of the way and eventually walked past Daisuke.

Daisuke just stood there, boiling from anger. The dark clouds were on top of them, a Thunder and rain started to fall on both of them. Izanagi was still not too far away.

Soaked and at the sound of another thunder, Daisuke took off his jacket from school and threw it at Izanagi while shouting his name.

"Izanagi!"

The jacket hit him right in the face, it being a heavier from the water, Izanagi stumbled a little, then he felt something cold, far too cold from for it to be the rain.

Steel, in his throat.

Daisuke took the knife out of Izanagi, fold it back after cleaning it a little with the Rain and made a run for it, leaving his jacked behind.

---

"The rest we already know... he changed his name, entered high school and became the Kai Tadasuki we knew back then..." \*click\* sounded the empty cup being placed on the little plate.

"Oh wow!" Sanageyama was the most impressed.



"Now you all know who he was long before we found him. Do not get confused, Daisuke Kogane no longer exists inside our friend and ally Kai Tadasuki!"

"I never thought Mr. Lizard had killed someone... wait a minute! If this asshole Izanagi is dead, then how come he's messing shit up at the districts?!"

"That's exactly why he was so serious about it..."

"A Phantom of the past... it's almost... poetic" Sanageyama added.

"Didn't take you for the romantic type, Baka Saru!" (Stupid Monkey)

"Now I get why he got all serious... man, he's scary when he gets like that..." Sanageyama spoke his mind.

"I have to concur, he's far more fun to hang out with when he's not so serious and stuff" Nonon also poke her mind, this time though, Satsuki seemed a bit amused at her words.

"So it's not fun to spend time with me, is that what you are saying, Jakuzure?" She was joking, but the way she said it made it sound like a threat.

"N-not at all Lady Satsuki..." Nonon was scared. Satsuki laughed gracefully at her reaction. Then Satsuki got up from her seat.

"That is all for now, you all are dismissed for today." The sun had already settled, so she send her Elites away.

"Thank you Lady Satsuki!" They all bowed and left a after a bit. Ending the day.

## Lost and Found In the Fog

Satsuki returned to her room and took Junketsu off, having it nailed inside some sort of frame. She put on her gown and sat on a chair in front of Junketsu. A Couple of days had passed since she told the Elite Four about Kai's past, yet he barely came out of his room.

As the warmth of tea filled her mouth, she remembered the nightmare she had, the one where she struck down Kai, the most loyal, friendly and strongest of her subordinates.

"(Kai... Are you sure about this? bah! is no use, i'll have to ask him directly if i want to be at peace!)"

---

There i was, sitting in the same chair for god knows how many days straight. I only went out after getting some info on that mohawk guy who tried to hunt down the Matoi Girl. To do the paperwork about all the shit they broke... damn now i'm pissed... Nonon! you really needed to leave those shitty clubs fight them? they also made a mess i... guess it was to get data on this Mohawk guy...

The room was dark but I could tell where everything was, I have been her for a long time... The solitude of the room was broken by a tall man, he had a sword on his back and wore a white coat.

"You gain anything sneaking? Sanageyama"

"Nah, just thought i'll let you know that i'll ask Lady Satsuki about fighting Matoi"

"Have fun Uzu"

"You're just gonna send me off like that?" He put a comically sad face but returned to normal after a bit "I'm gonna beat her... and once i do: i want the rematch, Kai!"

"Someone is excited, but first you gotta make it back if you plan to make those declarations, Sanageyama" He has no chance, he is strong but being muscle head as well as that cocky attitude ain't getting him nowhere. The Matoi girl is smarter than she seems, she will find about his weakness.

"So much for encouragement!" He walked towards the door looking annoyed.

"Would you take encouragement from me?"

"Ha, good point! Later, Kai"

"See ya"

With that he left, leaving me to wonder what the fuck is Izanagi's deal being alive. Not even half an hour later, someone knocks on my door, being quite loud is was obviously Nonon.

"You can come in Jakuzure..."

"Creepy, how'd you know it was me, Mr. Lizard?" She said while opening the door.

"You don't seem to interested in hiding your presence, Jakuzure"

"Fine, you win, but today i'm here cause i wanted to talk to you."

"What about?"

"Bout' Satsuki-WHY IS SO GODDAMN DARK?! I THOUGHT YOU WERE A LIZARD, NOT A DAMN BAT!"

"Flattering as always... you can turn on the lights if you want... but be sure of turn them off when you leave."

"You already assume i'm gonna be here just a little while, i swear is enough with just one Satsuki, i don't really like having two"

"So you like the chill me more, huh? i'll remember that. (Two Satsukies huh...)"

She blushed and started screaming "Don't put words in my mouth, Orokana Tokage!" (Dumb Lizard) She then calmed down.

"So what is it?"

"Satsuki... She seemed worried about you. Kai... just, don't do anything she wouldn't do..."

"That's a very short list, you do realize that, no?"

"Exactly, you see... she really likes having you here, do everyone a favor and don't screw up ruining that..."

"I won't be going anywhere Nonon, also Inumuta, is quite disturbing having you in invisible..."

"Uwah, i've been discovered" a voice came from nowhere.

"(Empress... Alone... Happy...)You two can go now, i want to be alone some more time, thanks Nonon... you too Houka."

"A pleasure, Kai/Mr. Lizard" They both bowed slightly and made their way outside the room. As soon as the door closed, i could hear Inumuta lecturing nono about her calling me Lizard when they bowed and Nonon was not giving having any of it even calling him dog a couple of times.

The sun was setting, i could tell since the slim figure of a beautiful woman stood my doorstep.

"Satsuki, quite the pleasant surprise" I smiled at her unconsciously. She was wearing Junketsu.

"You seem disturbed, Kai... You're not afraid, are you?"

"Just confused, but if i was, i would have ran straight to where he was last seen. You know how i can get when i'm afraid..."

"And it's because of that that i must ask, must you really fight him?"

"I do... if he somehow survived and he is causing chaos in Honno City then it's my duty as both the Vice-President of Honnouji Academy and as Kai Tadasuki to stop him... i do apologize in advance if i damage the school though"

"I see... then i'll have you do the paperwork for the repairs yourself and see if that stops your hand" She giggled a bit, she is so cute when she is like that.

"Ugh... don't do me like that..." i said in response to her little joke, though she can and probably will hold me to that...

"When you win, do me a favor and join me for a cup of tea, will you?"

"Absolutely!" She knows i can't taste it, so to me it just feels like hot water, yet if its with her, i don't mind.

"Oh!" She let out a little scream as if she was surprised.

"What is it?"

"Nothing, i didn't quite expected you to agree so fast..."

"It'll be the celebration, Nonon might want in as well though..."

"You're not wrong there... so what's your plan?"

"Fight him face to face, the Matoi girl might butt in after i'm done... so i need her to stay away from the fight"

"You already have something in mind, don't you?"

"Yes... Sanageyama will ask your permission to fight her... please let him"

"We will lose him... but you already knew that"

"Sorry Satsuki"

"Don't. I want you all stand tall" She walked in, closing the door "if his own weight brings him down, then so be it."

"You never cease to surprise me Satsuki..."

"Neither do you, Kai..."

"You'll watch me fight, will you?"

"Of course i will Kai, I will also use all my strength should you need it."

"That makes me feel way too safe... Thanks Satsuki"

"You're welcome, now i shall take my leave, there are stuff that need to be taken care of. It's been fun Kai" Satsuki smiled and dissipated all the fears i could ever had, then bowed a little and immediately started to walk to the door.

"Goodbye... Satsuki..." Then she stopped, i know not why, but she seemed in shock "Is everything alright, Satsuki?"

"Yeah... don't worry about it. Kai..."

"Yes?"

"Win..." She did not waited for my response and she was gone already.

The next day, a big cargo of Life Fibers was being delivered... i believe i can leave that to Shiro and Inumuta. I have something else to worry about after all: Satsuki will be away when i fight Izanagi, damn, i wanted her to see me kick his ass.

Later, the bait has been bitten, Matoi was on her way to Sanageyama's dojo, the others were relatively close by, I don't mind fighting him without them watching. I use a prerecorded message on the intercom that covers the entirety of Honno City.

"Daisuke Kogane, You have caused many a blunder to the citizens of Honno City, show yourself at Honnouji Academy!"

It may sound weird to bystanders, but it seems that it was good enough. From the top of Honnouji Tower, just a little behind Satsuki's spot, i spot a figure between the dust clouds at the entrance.

Izanagi Kogane my dead brother.

Equipped with a spear, wore a black coat and a face mask covering his mouth.

"It's been far too long!"

He stood there silently

"Really wished to not ever see you again!"

The steps started to appear and i walked down them. Once at ground level. Izanagi points his spear at me.

"Give her back!" he yells at me.

"(Her? what do you mean?) I have nothing for you!"

His head unnaturally twisted and something appeared on his left hand. a Spike.

I didn't gave him time to do any tricks, i lunged forward aiming a punch at his face with all i had. But before i could hit him, a force sent me flying away from him. Smalls stars like the ones seen when Matoi or Satsuki transform appeared, but instead of white, they were dark.

"(Kamui... Blade... Thu-)" i could not make out the last word this time.

***"Life Fibers Assimilation! Izanagi no Kamui! " (God Robes of Izanagi)***

"WHAT?!" I guess i also need to take out the big guns, where the fuck did he got a Kamui?! " ***Yottsu-boshi Goku Seifuku! Totsugeki no Sō***" (Four-Star Goku Uniform! Assault Regalia)

He looked really weird, the coat now covered his entire body but from the thigh down, which seemed to be bare, wore a full mask covering his face and the spear became double headed, it had a blade on end and a spike on the other.

I transformed my rapier into a two handed sword. Waiting for Izanagi's move.

And when he did... I did not expected a move this sloppy, even Nonon's slaps were more difficult to dodge than this. No! keep your guard up, it could be a bluff!

I dodged backwards, sword up, waiting for the shockwave of his attack. Nothing.

"Shiro! got anything on him?!" I whispered inside my armor to the one surveilling the battle.

"Nothing, he called his suit a Kamui, but I barely detect any Life Fibers on it... Maybe it was all a fluke?"

"Don't think so, he was capable of escaping the two stars residents, he should be somewhat stronger..."

Out of nowhere, a thick fog started to form around me.

"Shiro, you seeing this?"



"I am, however, from the faraway camera it looks like there's nothing there."

"An illusion then? bring it. Shiro i need you to be my trusty eyes! ready?" i put up my guard, 'this is my 12 o clock' was what i told Iori with this.

"Whenever you are!"

"GIVE HER BACK!" i felt wind move.

"At your 5!"

I took a slash blindly at that spot, i struck something. When i finally caught up what i saw, it was a big dark green armor. It disappeared soon after that.

"Sanageyama?!"

"It was a fake, i'm sure it was Izanagi when i spotted him!"

"What a lame trick..."

"From your 9!"

A pink laser came from that direction, i dodged it Jumped forward and took a slash at the small woman who fired it. This time it was Nonon's clone.

"10 feet behind you!"

"Gotcha!"

I make my way through the fog to where Shiro told me he was.

"Kai?!"

The voice of a young woman, Omiko Hakodate, she was there, in the ground, crying. That's how she was the first time i met her. But

she was wearing a her two star uniform. Another Fake! My sword comes down and cleaves clone in half, breaking the ground.

I feel another presence, a real one, it doesn't feel like Izanagi at all.

"Oy Oy! Vice-Prez! have you gone crazy or somethin?"

"Ryuko Matoi, you're the last person i wanna see right now!"

"You shadowboxin or what?" She said with this smug look on her face, i assume she was waiting for me to 'realize' that she was here because she had already beaten Sanageyama.

"Nothing that concerns you"

"Cut me some slack will ya, i just beat the annoying green sword wielding Monkey of yours! i think i'm on a roll!"

"Shiro, this one's the real Matoi?"

"Yes, she came running out of the dojo after hearing someone was doing some noise outside."

"I see... then how about this Matoi! There's some special kind of asshole hidden in the this fog, help me find him and i'll give you your chance!"

"How about i kick your ass right here and now?! Life Fiber Synchronize! Kamui Senketsu!"

"(What a... fierce woman, if she wasn't wearing a Kamui i bet Uzu would've been all over you...) I'm nothing like the Monkey you just fought i'll warn you."

"Whatever, you all are just Kiryuin's goons!"

"KAI, FROM ABOVE!"

"!" a hunched figure tried to land a hit on me, what a weird weapon, it looks like "Scissors?!" i blocked the slash and pushed him away, it disappeared in the fog.

Matoi was frozen on her place, then she spoke after a bit.

"Is this some kind of fucking joke?! Answer me Vice-prez!"

"Tadasuki is enough! and i told you, there's a douchebag hidden in here, i don't know who that old man was, but they are all illusions!"

"I can't go idle while some fucker is stealing my dad's look, i'll help you this time but you better be ready when i'm done with him!"

"Shiro, tell the others we won't need their backup right now!"

"Way ahead of you!"

"Back to back, Matoi!"

She does a sound like she agrees and we stay there silently waiting for Izanagi's next attack.

"At your 2 Ka-!"

Before i could react, Matoi is already attacking there. "Whoa she's fast! (Interesting...)"

"Get back here you sonuvabitch!"

"I guess it's time i got serious as well..."

The sword disappears and the gauntlets start to shine, a second later, they become Big Claws. Just as the transformation ends, i feel someone running towards me from behind. I see Matoi charging at me. It could' only mean one of two things, either another of the trashy illusions or...

I take a swing to the air in front of me. Five Waves of wind come forth and dissipate part of the illusory fog revealing him. I got a hit. Matoi was now standing guard up after seeing that attack.

"Yeah no kidding" She whispered to someone, it wasn't to me. I could tell.

"Inumuta, see something interesting?" i assumed Inumuta was with lori on the other side of the intercom.

"Yeah, actually, apparently those illusions are area based, meaning: if you get far enough you will stop seeing them."

"Fucking asshole, making me look like a madman..."

"Whoa there Mr. Lizard, language"

"Good to hear about you too Nonon, where's Sanageyama"

"Licking his wounds and maybe packing up, but something tells me you already knew that"

"Oh, it's moving again" Inumuta said unimpressed.

"There it comes!" Matoi warned me.

"Oy Matoi! Do me a favor!"

I discreetly pointed to the right while 'examining my claws' and positioned myself to run to the left.

"Gotcha! Ready Senketsu?!"

"(She talks to it, weird... hmm, could Junketsu do the same?)"

After an exchange of readied glances. We both ran towards Izanagi one from each side, he was dazed. I took a slash sending some more wind waves, not directly at him, but to his side. He stumbled

and i kicked Assault Regalia into overdrive so i could get closer to him as fast as possible.

I was right by his side, Matoi was still a little behind, just perfect. I punch him in the side and send him flying up.

" ***Katatachi Basami: Buttagiru Mōdo!***" (Scissor Blade: Decapitation Mode!)

I took the time to cool down the Assault Regalia and to get into position, i'm gonna punch that piece of shit out of our Fortress!

" ***Sen-i-Sōshitsu!*** " (Fiber Lost!)

Just as predicted, a couple of really small fibers fused into Matoi's Kamui and there he comes falling down, just where i want him. I clench my fist and my uniform anchors itself on the ground as to not fly away from the force. I throw the punch.

" ***Hissatsu!***" (Finishing Move!)

I got him right in the face. Time slowed down. Like if a Lightning had landed where i was standing, a deafening Thunder was heard as the shockwave from the punch cleansed the fog along with a couple of clouds above Honnouji.

" ***Inazuma no Ato!***" (After the lightning!)

Not even half a second later, Izanagi's body blasts off, never to be seen again. The ground around me moves like water creating something like a Tidal Wave made out of dirt. Matoi is also sent flying away. I have just a couple of minutes left on my uniform, that last move took a lot of energy.

"We're not done here yet!" She yells while on the air.

With my claws still equipped i dash towards where she would have landed. Her face changes when she notices me waiting for her and gets her Scissor Blade up.

"(I'm all out of time huh?)" I was ready to punch her, but the uniform reverted to its original form and I relaxed. "It was fun Ryuko Matoi, I thank you."

\*plap\* she landed on her face since she was ready to fight, not to land.

"Hey, You gonna just quit?!" She yelled at me while all dirty and with a red face from the hit.

"I have things to do as the Vice-President" Obviously it was a lie, my uniform ran out of power... another Goku uniform that cannot keep up with me... yet if i increase the Stars, it damages me beyond belief... i still can't believe that Satsuki manages to wear that thing... I need more power, but if i have it, it wants to destroy me... FUCK! i won't let Satsuki to walk any path alone! With Izanami with me... i still have some time to figure another way to gain power.

"Don't give me that crap! You said you'll give me a chance if i help you get rid of whoever the fuck that was!"

"And you can hold me to that, not today though, i have work to do so you and your friend Mankanshoku can enjoy your stay here."

"Bullshit!" She then started whispering "You also don't give me that! We can totally take this guy on!... ugh... You do have a point..."

"What a lovely act you're having there, Matoi!"

"Shut up!" She blushed for a second before going all serious again "Tadasuki was it? I'll beat you and when i'm done with you, I'll get to fight the Queen Bee!"

"I'll be looking forward to it, Ryuko Matoi!" She walked off and her Kamui returned to the Black and Red Sailor uniform, I also went home, towards Honno Tower.

It got dark and the clouds i had dispersed before were now storm clouds, i guess they didn't liked me using that move...

After getting back into the meeting room, i was relaxed once again, the joy in Nonon's face was almost cute. Gamagoori was somewhere beating onlookers and Inumuta and Shiro were busy reviewing the data i got for them.

"It's really quiet without Sanageyama now, isn't it?"

"You said it Mr. Lizard"

"How exactly did Sanageyama lost to Matoi?"

"She blinded him" Nonon was really bored watching the dark clouds in the horizon.

"Well that much was obvious... but-"

"I'll be leaving now Kai, if you don't mind" She sounded a little angry.

"You're quite slippery... is okay, You're Dismissed" With that she went away and i was left alone inside the enormous and luxurious room.

A couple of hours passed, i still hadn't received the report from Inumuta and Shiro, but i could still wait. Now it was pouring outside. It's been a while since it last rained this hard.

\*plip plip\*

"Oh Great! she's back." Satsuki had returned, that alarm was meant to tell when a helicopter was getting close. Soroi gave me an umbrella and we went onto the helipad to wait for her.

That's the stuff, the cold wind trying to make you fall, raindrops almost physically damaging you, I love it. But there is one 'thing' i like even more.

"How was your mother's mood?" Soroi asked as they both walked from the helipad towards the insides.

"I explained to her why i took Junketsu. You needn't worry, Soroi" She noticed me "Kai, i trust everything went well."

"More like 'manageable' rather than 'well' but the results were the expected, I'll fill you in in a bit"

We both looked at the shell of man who was on his knees under the rain.

"We have no time for losers, Sanageyama!"

"I was overconfident in my eyesight, If you two give me another chance! I'll defeat Matoi for certain this time!"

"Pathetic" She read my mind. I stayed silent during all of this. "We don't need subordinates who lack resolve."

"I have resolve! Here is proof!" A lightning shone letting both of us see Sanageyama's face.

"So you have" She was impressed at what she saw, needless to say, so was I. Also,'We'? she gives me too much power on this type of situations...



# A Thousand Eyes

"What do you think, Tadasuki?"

"Impressed, i'd say you let him"

Sanageyama lowered his head until he hit the floor.

"It seems we share opinions, very well Sanageyama, you've earned your second chance"

"Thank you very much! To both of you! I promise I won't fail again!"

"Of course you won't... leave, I'll inform Iori"

"Thanks!"

With that Sanageyama got up and walked through the door and to the elevator behind me.

"That's gonna be fun, wouldn't you agree? Satsuki"

"Indeed, it appears that is what happens when you force someone to change"

"Either way, that something for tomorrow, now there is quite a couple of things i must tell you, but first let's get somewhere more comfortable"

"Agreed, lead the way Kai"

I walked back into the tower and towards Satsuki's room, there was already a pair of chairs in a small round table. We sat facing eachother and waited for Soroi to finish the tea.

"Huh? where is Nonon?"

"She excused herself earlier, she seemed really annoyed by something..."

"Any idea what?"

"A couple... most of them tied to what happened when i fought Izanagi..."

"Interesting..."

From the meeting room, Soroi came in with a cart, it had two cups already full on it.

"Thanks Soroi"

"You're welcome Master Kai"

I took a sip, it burned my tongue but i pretend to like it.

"Now let's get to business" she put her cup down.

I told her about how surprisingly weak he was, the "Kamui" that he was wearing, his techniques and about when Matoi stepped in.

"Illusions and a different kind of Life Fibers..."

"That's what i'll like to think, but Iori and Inumuta haven't finished analyzing the data"

"And the damage to the school?"

"Minimal"

"Good, it seem what i said did stopped you" She smiled while she took the cup to her mouth.

"Yeah... i would have destroyed him before Matoi showed up, but i really didn't wanted to receive you on a desk with a mountain of papers..."

"How very thoughtful, thanks"

"Anytime... also... no, it's nothing..."

"Speak"

"My uniform overheated again, right when i was about to fight Matoi"

"Unfortunate, i'll have lori make it even sturdier next time"

"Thank you Satsuki... sorry if i'm too intrusive but, How does it feel to wear Junketsu?"

"... It definitely is different than normal clothes, it feels like skin, it even breathes" Junketsu's eyes moved to look directly at me.

"Creepy... say, can it speak?"

"Huh?"

"Well, it seemed like Matoi could talk to her Kamui and it crossed my mind that maybe they can talk, being made entirely of life fibers and all that..."

"Interesting point, though i cannot say it does speak... maybe Matoi's Kamui made her go insane"

"She definitely fights like someone who knows what they are doing, so i don't think that's the case... "

"Allow me to change the topic... I have told the Elite Four about your past... about Daisuke"

"Thank you very much!" i bowed while sitting, she looked surprised  
"They have the right to know." I've been meaning to tell them myself, but i never really found a chance.

"I see..." Satsuki stayed silent for a while, when i looked up, she seemed quite relieved. Curious.

"If i may Satsuki, back to the today's real topic: Izanagi or whatever that was, will be back"

"I thought so too, but when?"

"I do not know, but we better increase the number of cameras, if he uses those tricks again, we'll need them to fight or expose anyone he summons."

Someone knocked on the door.

"Lady Satsuki, Tadasuki, may i interrupt?" It was inumuta, he sounded tired.

"Come in Inumuta!" she ordered him from her seat.

"Excuse me, we have finished analyzing Izanagi's battle data."

"Took you two long enough" I lectured him.

"I apologize, but you must see what we found out"

"Continue Inumuta"

"At once" he placed a tablet in the table. It started showing images from the fight. "His battle tactics were kind of lame, but i found out that when Matoi strip him, a small reading of energy left his body, of course that was before Tadasuki here send him flying to the next hemisphere."

"Interesting... what else"

"I do believe that lori told you that he did not detected any Life Fibers when you were fighting, he was kinda correct"

"Explain"

"Yes, you see, when analyzing for Life Fibers, we look for energy flowing in the clothes, however, there was no such energy inside

those Life Fibers, we also took the liberty of calling them: **Undead Fibers**, as it explains what they are with great ease."

"Undead? like, zombies?"

"More like Skeletons, moving on their own without the energy of the 'Living' counterparts and that they might be being controlled by something."

"Good work Inumuta!"

"Thank you very much Lady Satsuki" he did a slight bow.

"Anything else?"

"It would seem like Izanagi's body when they fought was actually a corpse, reanimated by the Undead Fibers, we still have no clue as to why or how but we should expect another attack in the future, however since their modus operandi and association are still quite unknown we lack the data to predict their next move"

"Well ain't that quite the discovery, a new enemy tries to hunt us from beyond the grave..." I said sarcastically.

"One last thing, there is still much we don't know about the Undead Fibers, which is why we needed more time analyzing, but they are surprisingly frail. So mathematically speaking: this enemy should not be very strong but it may use many a trick to make it up for such weakness."

"Excellent, keep an eye out for anything else you can find and increase the surveillance in Honno City, you're dismissed for today"

"Thank you Lady Satsuki!"

Inumuta left soon after, looking exhausted.

"You fought Izanagi yourself, do you believe these Undead Fibers are a threat?"

"No, yet i cannot shake off the feeling that there's a big part that we're missing..."

"Then we'll find it, no one will stops us!"

"But they're welcome to try!"

The serene night continued for a bit, i told her about the encounter i had with Nonon and Inumuta the day she visited me at my room, Also about the daily arm wrestle with Gamagoori, i was about to win, but the moment Mankanshoku showed up, i lost. Not that i was going at it seriously, but it there's sure as shit something inside his big blonde head, other than Honnouji's purpose. She seemed really happy about it all and of course, that made me also very happy.

---

Earlier that day.

"Don't give me that crap! You said you'll give me a chance if I help you get rid of whoever the fuck that was!"

"And you can hold me to that, not today though, i have work to do so you and your friend Mankanshoku can enjoy your stay here."

"Bullshit!"

S: "Ryuko, we must retreat!"

"You also don't give me that! We can totally take this guy on!... "

S: "I admit that we can survive that punch he gave that guy, but do you think we'll be able to return anytime soon? besides, something is really wrong here, didn't you saw those Life Fibers?"

"ugh... You do have a point..."

"What a lovely act you're having there, Mato!"

"Shut up!" She blushed for a second before going all serious again  
"Tadasuki was it? I'll beat you and when i'm done with you, I'll get to fight the Queen Bee!"

"I'll be looking forward to it, Ryuko Matoi!" She walked off and her Kamui returned to the Black and Red Sailor uniform while Tadasuki returned to Honno Tower.

Once Ryuko and Senketsu were on their way down to Mako's house, Senketsu started to talk again.

S: "Ryuko"

"Whaddaya want?"

S: "You're angry"

"How can i not be! i beat the shit out of one of the Elite Four and just a couple of minutes later, i'm helping Kiryuin's next in charge..."

S: "If you put it like that..."

"What, you wanna return a kick that guy?"

S: "No, but i do want to know more about both of them"

"Who?"

S: "Tadasuki the Vice-President and whoever that was he sent flying, though we might not be able to find the latter..."

"Yeah, i do not think he is just like the green sword guy i found no opening when he fought, it was kinda like when i fought Kiryuin... he also may know a thing or two about my father"

S: "Ryuko... did you felt something strange when we took that guy's Life Fibers?"

"Uh? no, not really... did you?"

S: "I can tell they were not just any normal Life Fibers, but i don't know what exactly was different..."

"Anyway, time for dinner!"

S: "Well that was quite the change of topic. OH! RYUKO!"

"Wh-wh-what is it?!" She got into fighting stance.

S: "Can you iron me?"

"..."

---

I slept damn good that night, i didn't got up until it was time to start labors. I'm the second one to arrive at the meeting room, just after Satsuki. We were both waiting for today's main event: Sanageyama vs Matoi Round 2.

Uzu, as well as Shiro, were on some type of ring in the middle of the courtyard, it had an incredible amount of spikes, it sure as shit emits Sanageyama Energy.

The visitor side shows up, Ryuko Matoi.

"Didn't know losers got a second chance, Guess you two got softer, Kiryuin, Tadasuki!" did Satsuki just flinch? must've been my imagination.

"Let's see if you can say that again after you've fight him, Ryuko Matoi!" She answered while i stayed silent...

"I'm gonna show you what happens when you force a man to change" He transformed "**Mitsuboshi Goku Seifuku: Tsurugi no Sō Aratame**" (Three-star Goku Uniform: Blade Regalia )

"Then let's get this over with quick. **Jin'i Ittai Kamui Senketsu**" ( Life Fiber Synchronize Kamui Senketsu)



Up next, Matoi used the same tactic she did the first time, guess she wasn't that smart after all, to use the same trick against the same foe, a fool is always exposed when you do that.

"(Eyes... Endless... Hunger...)"

It didn't took long to find out the fool, Matoi got her ass handed to her by Sanageyama's sword. Then she realized what was happening, Sanageyama's eyes were sewn shut.

"He's realized his mistake and sacrificed everything to beat you! Keep that in mind Matoi!" Satsuki told Matoi and Sanageyama started walking towards her, she didn't move, i assume she was scared. The barrage of strikes continued but stops very briefly when Satsuki explained what the Shingantsu, The eyes of the mind were. I was impressed, i almost started to clap at both of their performances.

The barrage resumed, Matoi barely could block Sanageyama's attacks, finally after what it seemed like an endless combo of attacks at the sound of "Men, Dou, Kote" Matoi was on the ground and Uzu charged his Finishing Move. Then the Blade Regalia reverted to its original form, it overheated, just like mine does. Nice one Sanageyama, maybe you'll be able to beat me if you keep that rhythm up.

Matoi took this opportunity to escape. Damn, this close to a victory. Then again, it's a win if your enemy retreated.

Once It was all over, Sanageyama returned to Honno tower and Shiro fixed his uniform. I want what he's having!

I was the last one to enter the tower, and i saw a shadow where Matoi was stuck just a couple minutes ago, as soon as i blinked it disappeared. They're back... the Undead Fibers Users... i'm never gonna get used to that name...

# Nightmares and Dragons

Since i saw that Undead Fibers User I began going on far more guard turns, even joining Gamagoori a couple of times. Of course I told everyone to be alert at them but for the first couple of days we found nothing.

The night of the fifth day after the search. I was alone in my room, I've finished everything that had to be done today as an excuse to stay awake, but other than the decreasing amount of clubs, there was nothing that really needed to be taken care of... well there was Matoi but she isn't really an enemy.

I took my Uniform off and lay down for a while, eventually falling asleep out of boredom instead of out of tiredness.

A completely white canvas came into view, i could not see anything else for a couple of minutes. When i finally got accustomed to the light, I saw there was something on the endlessly white terrain. A Lock, a big one, its size probably rived Honnouji academy. A myriad of chains blocked keyhole of the big lock.

"Weird..."

I felt something behind me. i turned around quickly to see what it was, nothing, it disappeared. Someone whispered in my ear.

"Restrian... Limit... All-Out..."

I stood there paralyzed, i could not move. Eventually a hand crept onto my right shoulder. Red, Skeletal and with razor sharp fingers, it moved down my arm. When it covered my entire arm, i heard the rattling of chains behind me followed with the sound of them breaking.

I could now move with the skeletal hand being worn as if it was a gauntlet i turned around to see who was whispering, if anyone.

A Hollow red skull, with hair that's even longer than Satsuki's, was floating on the air. it had a body but i could not make it out, it was all clouded in a crimson mist.

I moved my arm to try and touch it, it mimics my movements.

I woke up, in cold sweat and gasping for air. Guess it's time to work...

Morning of the sixth day searching for the new foe. Everyone gathered at the meeting room, there was far too little energy here.

"What's this, did i miss a party or something last night?!"

"Not in the mood, Baka Tokage" (Stupid Lizard)

Inumuta had definitely not slept, his eye bags were far too big. Gamagoori didn't even looked at me. Sanageyama was out doing rounds and Nonon and Satsuki had an extremely serious face. What in fresh hell happened?

"Tadasuki"

"Lady Satsuki"

"Go look for Sanageyama, he needs your help"

"At once Lady Satsuki"

I left the meeting room, i'll start by looking at his dojo, he usually stops there for a while. Maybe he'll tell me why are they all look so tired.

---

Once Tadsuki was on visible down at the courtyard, everyone on the meeting room now faced Satsuki. Sanageyama and Shiro came out of Satsuki's room.

"Now that he is gone i believe we can now discuss... the recent event"

"Yes Lady Satsuki" Everyone answered and bowed.

"Let's start by stating the obvious: everyone in this room had some sort of nightmare involving Kai Tadasuki, correct?"

"Yes!"

"The earliest case of these nightmares is dated to the same night as Sanageyama's redemption, followed by Jakuzure the night after, then Inumuta, Iori the next day, Gamagoori and finally mine just last night"

"One every night, that is the pattern"

"If i may Lady Satsuki" Gamagoori spoke.

"What is it?"

"Why is it we must deceive Tadasuki for this meeting to take place?"

"He is the constant on all the nightmares, if the thing making us have this nightmares is somehow literally tied to him, then it's only logical to send him away. For the record i do trust him, he cannot be the one behind the nightmares, but he is somehow unwillingly involved"

"I see... but i believe we can all agree that this is also part of the new enemy's attack, thus i still believe we should tell him"

"In due time Gamagoori, for now this meeting is to try and find any other constants in the nightmares and see if we can find its roots"

"Understood, then who shall begin?"

"If we're gonna go in order from first to last, then I'll start"  
Sanageyama proposed and everyone agreed.

---

Sanageyama had just been granted a second chance and his new goku uniform was being made, all that it was left was to challenge Matoi the day after and win. There's no telling what will happen to him if he fails. He knows that Satsuki will make sure he never forgets and he know not how Kai will react if he does fail.

"Well, i'm not losing, so there's no reason to worry about that at all" he talked to himself and fell asleep in record time, his eyes being shut relaxed him more than expected.

He dreamed of a big open field, like the one he fought Satsuki for the first time back in middle school. He was standing there with in his Goku Uniform watching a battle, Matoi vs... Kai.

He blinked... the battle was over.

"(When did you get this strong?! Kai!)"

"You're just weak Sanageyama!" like if what Sanageyama thought was said out loud, Kai answered.

"BULLSHIT!" he unsheathed his bamboo sword. Neither of them transformed their Goku Uniforms.

He took a swing while putting his Tengansu in overdrive. He missed he struck a red fog instead.

"Too slow! Sanageyama!" Kai was already behind him more than prepared to punch Sanageyama. He could not block it in time.

**"Inazuma no Ato"** (After the lightning)

"I WON'T LOSE!" He woke up screaming that, now more than ever he was determined to beat his opponent.

---

"Yep, that's definitely something you'll fear"

"Shut up and tell yours Jakuzure"

"The monkey is mad today, well then here I go"

---

The night of the fight against Izanagi, Nonon decide to leave for today, she wanted to stay up and wait for Satsuki, but she was mad at Mr. Lizard for a couple of things: mainly that he cleaved her clone in half without stuttering even a bit, so she left to not bring down the mood of the meeting, specially after Sanageyama's defeat.

She fell asleep surprisingly fast for her mood.

The courtyard of Honnouji Academy, quiet as a graveyard.

She takes a look around and on her clothes, she is wearing Matoi's Kamui, Senketsu.

"What's with this slutty outfit?!"

"Nonon Jakuzure!" Could be heard from the top of Honno Tower as a bright red light blinded her. She know this voice really well, Tadasuki.

"Oy! Sr. Lizard! What's the meaning of this?!"

"You requested a challenge against my fiance so you could take her place, remember?"

"Your what?! Bullshit!"

"Doesn't matter, get down there and destroy her, will you, Satsuki"  
Tadasuki grabbed Satsuki's face like if she was a doll.

"At once Master Kai" Nonon stopped her yelling and tried to soak in what she was seeing. Satsuki serving Kai, she was wearing the bitch garment the New Girl Matoi uses and she was about to fight Satsuki for Kai...

"(This has to be some fucked up dream...)" her confused face changed for a scared one as Satsuki walked down the steps and

with each one a cloud of red dust grew bigger and bigger. "Yeah, i ain't having any of this!"

Nonon forced herself to wake up, and succeeded. She was tired and even more annoyed at Tadasuki for it.

"Mr. Lizard you gonna pay for that" She mumbled on her way to the meeting room.

---

"Quite interesting I must say, Jakuzure"

"Please don't, Lady Satsuki..."

"You can force yourself to wake up, interesting skill" Inumuta remarked and then started his story.

---

Inumuta flopped into bed and fell asleep instantly, he was tired after many days of analyzing the Undead Fibers and having found nothing.

"I have barely anything to work with, not live specimen, no suspect and no idea how they truly work"

Inumuta had this dream frequently when he couldn't figure out something. He dreamed about being inside a giant computer that hold answers to everything if you know how to search.

This time was not so different, but he ran into a problem. A virus, he had nightmare about them a lot. but this one was quite strange. It had the form of a man made out of a Black and Red fog.

He launched an attack, but it was instantly reflected by its right arm and hit Inumuta, erasing parts of his body and of the endless machine he dreamt.

He started to run while attacking the virus. A couple of those attacks did hit the virus but deal no damage, in fact it looked like it was getting less foggy the more attacks it ate.

The face of the attacker virus became clearly visible. Kai Tadasuki was the virus in Inumuta's dream.

Tadasuki punched Inumuta in the face, deleting it.

Inumuta woke up in the middle of the night, and did not went back to sleep.

---

"That explains why you almost fell asleep when I was giving you the details on the new Goku Uniforms" Iori reminded him.

"I do apologize for that"

"Anyways i'm next"

---

Iori was on his room, working on a little extra than normal, since Kai's Uniform had overheated and he tried to find a way to make it last longer.

It was about time he went to sleep, tomorrow was going to be a busy day and he could not slack.

As soon he felt himself fell asleep, a loud noise woke him up. Something was trying to get into his room, first it knocked the door like anyone would, then it became louder, it started to punch the door. A red steam came from under the door.

The sound of a steel being scratched tormented Iori and did not stop for a while. Not even after five big slashes tore apart some of the metal door. A pair of mad eyes examined Iori from the outside. Why was he not moving?



He took a look around his clothes, he was sewn into the bed... with life fibers.

The slashes in the door became bigger and some parts fell down. He could now see the one who was trying to break into his room. Kai Tadasuki, In the couple of years Kai had served Satsuki they've managed become good friends, but why was he slashing away at his room?

"KAI! STOP!"

Silence

"K... Kai...?"

From the blackness outside his room, Kai finally destroyed the door and ran fully armored into Iori.

Then he woke up, or was woken up rather, one of the Sewing clubs members got worried and went in to check on him.

---

"Curious, that gets rid of the constant that Tadasuki initiated combat in retaliation..."

"What's left Inumuta?"

"Not much, combat of some level is involved, but barely in Jakuzure and Iori's case, there is also the Red mist. Oh right, Matoi is also out of the constants..."

"We're getting nowhere, Its continue and figure out from there"

"Of course Lady Satsuki" Gamagoori got up, bowed and started.

---

The outskirts of Honno City, Gamagori is taking on the sights, or so he thought. He was strapped to a chair on top of a boat, him alone, no one else was near.

From far away he spotted a figure of a man, he knew this man, they've become good friends under the rule of their mistress Satsuki Kiryuin, that man was Kai Tadasuki.

"TADASUKI!" he yelled at him but got no answers.

The ground quakes and the water stirs. Honno City is sinking. Tadasuki simply stays still. Devastated, Ira tries to break from what ties him to the boat, no response from his body.

Finally Tadasuki moves, but not towards Honno City, away from it, he walks slowly away on the highway leading to land. There is something on his hands, a big object, like a basketball, but uneven. He threw it on the water and kept walking.

Looking how Honno city slowly sinks drives Gamagoori to tears.

\*thud\*

Something hit the boat, Ira look over to what it was... someone was in the water, a girl with brown short hair, she did not move. His mind immediately went for the worst scenario.

"MANKANSHOKU!"

His scream woke him up as well as many neighbours.

"(So it was all a Nightmare...)"

---

"Scary... Mankanshoku? Ain't her the slacker who is always with Mato? What's her deal in your nightmare?"

"Not so sure myself..."

"Spill the beans big guy"

"I have no idea what you're talking about..." Gamagoori looked serious, far too serious. Nonon decided to let it slide for now, the

others weren't exactly interested right now.

"Enough, is time for my story..." Satsuki's cup trembled a little, only the Shingantsu of Sanageyama and Nonon caught it even if it was for a moment. They kept quiet, something that can scare Satsuki is not to be taken lightly.

---

Satsuki had just took off Junketsu for today, placed Bakuzan by her bed just in case, put on her nightgown and when to sleep. Today was yet another day of searching for the new enemy, yet nothing was found. It was worrisome.

Satsuki was deeply asleep, this enemy could not beat Tadasuki, thus it could not beat her.

Satsuki sat on a bench inside a brightly lit chapel. One by one the other member of the Elite Four, Iori and many others start to appear. Everyone she knew was there, everyone but a certain someone. Kai.

Just as she wondered where he was, he appeared. Wearing a black suit, and unlike his normal attire, it was being worn properly this time. There was something wrong about his red tie and right glove, but she could not make out what. He was standing at the altar looking towards the doors.

Bells started to sound, the doors of the chapel swung open and a tall woman dressed completely in white walked down towards the altar, her veil did not let anyone see her face.

\*thump thump\*

Satsuki's heart started to beat faster and faster with each step the woman took. When the woman in white reached the altar her heartbeat deafened the bells. Kai extended his hand to the woman until she got in place in front of him, then he lifted her veil.

Satsuki could not believe what she was seeing. Light painted the chapel in rainbow colors. The face of the woman was now visible, her ashen hair and pale skin belonged to only one person. Ragyo Kiryuin.

She wanted to scream, but nothing came out. She wanted to run at Kai, but her legs did not answered. She wanted to put an end to whatever was happening, but he just stood there, watching. A Red dust devil dragged her out and away from the chapel, she tried to grab something but it was useless.

She jumped from her bed, grabbing Bakuzan and taking a swing with it still sheathed. Slowly recovering from what she saw, she breathed heavily and heard a voice coming from outside her room.

"Lady Satsuki, it's time to start the day" It was Soroi.

She relaxed herself before answering "I'll be ready in a bit, thanks Soroi"

"Very well Lady Satsuki"

She did not heard that for she was focused on Bakuzan, it was trembling, no, it was her own hand. When was the last time something scared her so badly she trembled? She could not recall. But it was a new day at Honnouji academy, she should get ready. Steeling herself she managed to calm down and stop the trembling.

---

The room was completely silent, no one knew what to say not even Satsuki who did not took a sip of tea during the entire story.

Before anyone could say anything, a loud \*Boom\* was heard down at the grounds.

Tadasuki came out flying from the inside of the school, regained his balance and transformed. Ryuko Matoi ran towards him from the place he was shot out of.



## Sandstorm of Emotions

Morning of the sixth day searching for the new foe. Everyone gathered at the meeting room, there was far too little energy here.

"What's this, did I miss a party or something last night?!"

"Not in the mood, Baka Tokage" (Stupid Lizard)

Inumuta had definitely not slept, his eye bags were far too big. Gamagoori didn't even look at me. Sanageyama was out doing rounds and Nonon and Satsuki had an extremely serious face. What in fresh hell happened?

"Tadasuki!"

"Lady Satsuki"

"Go look for Sanageyama, he needs your help"

"At once Lady Satsuki"

I left the meeting room, I'll start by looking at his dojo, he usually stops there for a while. Maybe he'll tell me why are they all look so tired.

I took the elevator down to the courtyard and made my way to Sanageyama's dojo. The few students I encounter on my way bowed and as soon as I passed ran away, the usual.

The students do not fear me as much as they fear Satsuki, is mostly the layback attitude I show when I'm not serious that got me that fame, Satsuki seems to be ok with it. Probably many students have stayed because of that.

I reached the dojo and ask for Sanageyama, he's not here. The One star students told me he was at the Sewing club, that's when they

last saw him.

"(It's a damn long way there... damnit... orders are orders)"

On my way all to the opposite side of the school through the halls i begin to think what could be Satsuki is really planning involving the Matoi girl on all this.

"(So, if i follow my gut... I she is purging the Two-star students just like she does with the No-stars? That's more like it! but why Matoi? Oh! Right! Her Senketsu absorbed the Life Fiber out of Fukuroda and Omiko's goku uniforms... guess she wants to make her strong so she can recruit her... uh... that makes more sense than what i'd like to admit... The only missing part would be what she would do to make Matoi Join us... then again i don't think Matoi is dumb enough to not fight Ragyo with us once we strike)"

I feel something aching in my right forearm. It has to be Izanami.

"Huh?" When I returned from my deep thinking i see that Matoi has been trying to get my attention for a while now. "Oh, Matoi Ryuko..."

"Don't you 'Oh' me you bastard! I'm here to fight!"

"Not now, i'm busy"

"Bullshit! You're not gonna get away this time! Let's Go! Life Fiber Synchronize, Kamui Senketsu!"

\*sigh\* "You never stop do ya?"

"Well if you just happen to know who killed my father i may let you walk away!"

"I won't tell you even if i knew"

"Motherfucker!" She pointed her scissor blade to me.

"(Well i didn't really wanted to fight her and i cannot really fake a defeat... this is gonna be a tough one...)"

Someone whispered in my ear "Blade... Enemy... Let loose" it was far too creepy to ignore, i turned around to see who it was, no one...

I felt something hit my side from behind. I went flying to the courtyard, but managed to regain my balance. Before i could transform i saw someone was by my side, it wasn't Matoi, the hair was far too long.

"Yottsu-boshi Goku Seifuku! Totsugeki no Sō" (Four-Star Goku Uniform! Assault Regalia)

Matoi followed short after flying towards me.

"Don't you ignore me you sonuvabitch!"

Our swords clashed and a shockwave shook the entire school, during our struggle a dark red cloud formed at an abnormal speed on top of the academy.

"Oy!Oy! Vice-prez, thought you were tougher than this!"

"Don't push your luck! MATOI!" i won the clash, jumped back and immediately followed with a lunge, Matoi's body move like it was being dragged out of the way of my sword.

"Shit he's fast!"

"Not enough! Matoi!" in the middle of the lunge i swapped to the one hand sword and took a slash. She managed to block it.

"Looks like you're really nothing like that green guy..."

"I literally told you that"

"Thought it was all tall tales!"



I really want to beat the shit out of her, but i mustn't, Satsuki needs her.

We began exchanging slashes, the red cloud above us got lower with each clash. Curious, Satsuki hasn't came out to stop me...

The cloud is now surrounding us, we jump away from each other instinctively.

"This your doin Tadasuki?!"

"I don't use tricks this shitty! Mato!"

the cloud soon became a sandstorm with crimson lightning. I could no longer feel Mato's presence, doubt she could feel mine either.

"Kai! I'm here for the rematch!"

"Sanageyama?!" no, it wasn't him, this one had far too many openings on his posture, his eyes were still open and there was something else, his eyes were bright red.

One by one the other Elite Four appeared.

"You're NOT taking her away. Mr Lizard" Nonon's clone, I think she's talking about Satsuki.

"Precious data should not be wasted, Tadasuki" Inumuta's clone. He looked really angry.

"Let me repay you for that..." Shiro as well?

"WHY TADASUKI?! WHY?!" Gamagoori...

"I WON'T LET YOU GO ANYWHERE!" She wasn't wearing Junketsu.

"Satsuki?!" I was stunned for a moment, then recovered to see another figure just behind Satsuki. "Who are you?!"

"My name is Scylla and these are the feelings your friends have towards you"

"And here i thought you all were gonna use better tricks the second time"

"I have to agree, Izanagi was a moron, but these copies, i crafted them-"

"Then you are the one behind it all!"

"Let me finish, First of all: no I'm not. Second: I crafted these clones, but it was you the one who woke them up"

"And you're telling me this because...?"

"You have something we want back and you're not getting out of here with it"

"So it doesn't matter since i'm gonna die? bring it then!"  
Sanageyama's clone closed the distance far too fast for me to block.  
"(Blade...)"

"How does it feel? Kai!"

"I've had stronger for breakfast, asshole!" A pink baton almost pierced my back, barely managed to dodge it.

"Mister Lizard gotten faster i see"

"And the little snake bolder!"

A barrage of punches tried to overwhelm me, but failed.

"Not bad Tadasuki!"

"I'm flattered!" Spiked whips hit right in front of where i landed.

"WHY?!"

"If you told me what I did, then I may answer you"

"You are not going anywhere Kai... You will stay here, forever..."

"S-Satsuki?! (Enemy...)" I am surrounded, Shiro did not attacked, but he was probably part of a backup plan.

"Give up, you cannot win against them!"

The world became all white.

The same as the dream i just had, the lock and the skeleton were there.

"Let Loose..." it said

I look up at the lock, and more chains broke and feel from it. Seconds later i'm back in the real world.

"Ha! These counterfeit ain't nothing like the real deal! Let me show you why the Dragon of Honnouji earned his place!"

I equipped my claws, but they weren't going to be enough.

**" *Izanami no Haaku!*" (GRASP OF IZANAMI!)**

The Silver blade coated in red lightning bursts through the gauntlet. But it broke, in five perfectly identical parts. They each attached to my one finger.

"YES, SHE'S HERE!" Scylla yelled and Sanageyama's clone charged at me just as fast as before.

But this time, i was faster.

A slash of wind pierces the fake Sanageyama and almost hit all the others. Moments later the clone disappears like red ash. The sandstorm dwindled a little.

"Not so cocky now, are we?!"

The rest of the Elite Four ran towards me, Inumuta's was the first to fall, he is the weakest in combat, then I buried Nonon's in the ground and became ash soon after.

Gamagoori blocked a couple of slashes with his whips. But i got him and eventually it disappeared with a "why?!"

"WHO'S NEXT?!"

"I believe it's me, Kai"

"Come on then! A Satsuki's fake has no place in Honnouji!"

We both walked towards each other, the winds getting stronger and stronger the closer we were.

I take as side swipe, as expected, she blocked it. but the wind slashes continued their travel and ended Iori's clone. I heard a faint scream and the sound of rock being destroyed, i broke part of the school. But i didn't pay attention to any of it. I was focused on the Satsuki clone in front of me.

Scylla was escaping, i cannot let it.

I punch satsuki with my other hand and try to catch Scylla, Satsuki grabs my arm and drags me towards her. With my punch prepared to hit her but i was lost to what i happened in reality.

She kissed me. She dropped her Bakuzan and kissed me.

What's happening?! No, must keep it together!

"(Let loose...)"

She hugged me close to her. She was not letting go and i almost didn't wanted to either. But the moment i saw her blazing red eyes i snapped out of it.

"NO!" and i pierced her stomach with the Izanami. She feel to her knees. No time to waste, I must pursue Scylla.

The sandstorm had almost passed. i was closing in on Scylla, but something possessed me and i jumped towards her, catching her and almost swiping her head clean of her body. But i stopped myself before that.

She looked like a normal girl, she was crying a river with her eyes closed, she was scared shitless. I guess she didn't thought her plan would go that badly... doesn't matter, she our enemy and she knows stuff, i'll take back to interrogate.

"Make the sandstorm go away!"

"Yes! Yes!"

"Good girl, you'll be coming with me, no tricks this time, or at least use good ones."

She stayed silent.

\*click\* Satsuki light shone upon the remnants of dust on the courtyard.

"Tadasuki! Good work capturing this enemy! Return here at once!"

"So much for the first hours of the day..." i said under my breath.

"P-p-please don't kill me..."

"Answer some questions and we'll let you leave"

Matoi was nowhere to be seen, she escaped i think... yet another fight against her was interrupted. She's definitely gonna be back for yet another round... I'll cross that bridge when i get to it...

## Dunes of Questions

After Satsuki ended her story, no one knew what to say, they were all stunned by her nightmare. Even herself.

The silence was broken by Tadasuki who had just been sent flying into the courtyard, Ryuko Matoi pursued him.

"Tadasuki?! What is he doing?!"

"I do not know Lady Satsuki, but I don't think that they fighting is our biggest problem right now" Inumuta pointed towards the red cloud that formed in the skies, it went lower and lower at the sound of the combatants' clashes.

"Could this be?" Sanageyama implied that this is the work of the Undead Fiber Users.

"I believe so, you all must help Tadasuki to end this foe as soon as possible!"

"Understood Lady Satsuki!"

"Wait a minute Lady Satsuki!" Inumuta said immediately afterwards.  
"We have the visuals from Tadasuki's uniform"

What they saw though the screen (minus Sanageyama) left them dumbfounded, copies of them, referencing the nightmares they had and what they felt the moment they woke up.

"You all must stay here!"

"But you just said-"

"Listen closely, if we go down there there is a high possibility of being attacked by Tadasuki and I honestly think only three of us are capable of surviving his attacks"

"The Monkey, The Toad and yourself..."

"Correct, thus if the situation grows worse, only then we will all three of us go in and help him"

"WHOA!"

"What is it, Inumuta?!"

"I've never seen him pull moves like those... is quite interesting... and difficult to track from here"

"He seems to be doing fine, but he'll need backu-" Gamagoori was interrupted.

**" *Izanami no Haaku!*" (GRASP OF IZANAMI!)**

"WHAT?!"

"Iori! isn't that the blade he was developing with you?" Satsuki asked.

"It is! but how?! I'm sure it destroyed itself about two months ago!"

"How come he has it?!"

"I don't know! I never let anyone else into the vault and he cannot get in without me!"

"WHOA THERE!"

"Now what Inumuta?!"

"He just wiped out everyone but Lady Satsuki's clone, I'll put it on the big screen"

"You're kidding!" Sanageyama checked with his Shingantsu. Those clones were no more. "(What have you become? Kai...)"

"A Satsuki knock off cannot be as strong as the rea-wha-wha-wha-wha-wha-what!" Nonon was in shock after witnessing the Satsuki clone kiss Kai. Safe to say, everyone else was also stunned.

"What is it?!" Sanageyama yelled.

"Oh my..." Iori said under his breath.

Then they saw how Tadasuki pierced her with the Izanami. They were all, including Satsuki, mesmerized at the screen. Finally Satsuki spoke.

"Where's Matoi?"

"Oh. Yes! I have visuals of her outside the school, OH GOOD! Tadasuki captured the enemy!" Inumuta returned from the trance and answered.

"Perfect..." Everyone (but sanageyama) were still looking at the screen even though the scenes were nowhere near what caused them to look at it in the first place. "Sanageyama, go help him get the prisoner, I'll go throw the smoke screen..."

"Yes Lady Satsuki!"

\*click\* Satsuki light shone upon the remnants of dust on the courtyard.

"Tadasuki! Good work capturing this enemy! Return here at once!"

---

"Looks like you're really nothing like that green guy..."

"I literally told you that"

"Thought it was all tall tales!"

S: "Ryuko! Careful with the cloud!"



The red cloud surrounded both of them, they took distance away from each other instinctively.

"This your doin Tadasuki?!"

"I don't use tricks this shitty! Matoi!"

S: "I think we need! To escape again!" They both lost track of Tadasuki in the storm.

"To hell with that! When did you became such a coward!"

S: "Is not that Ryuko. This sand. Is making me. go. slee-"

Senketsu returned to his original form. Ryuko started running as fast as she could towards the outside of the sandstorm while trying to wake Senketsu up.

She got out the storm but also outside of the academy.

"Oy! Senketsu! You okay?!"

S: "Ah! Ryuko! weren't you gonna beat Tadasuki" Said all sleepy.

"Well someone fell asleep while I was in the middle of that"

S: "What?! sorry..."

"Is okay, but you have any idea what the hell is all that- wha!" She got startled since Tadasuki just pinned down a crying girl and almost swiped her head clean off.

She was about to step in, but.

"Make the sandstorm go away!"

"Yes! Yes!"

"(She was the one behind the storm?)"

S: RYUKO!

"What now?!" she whispered.

S: "Those claws! Do not let them touch me! Please don't let them!"

"Good girl, you'll be coming with me, no tricks this time, or at least use good ones" The girl stayed silent.

\*click\* Satsuki light shone upon the remnants of dust on the courtyard.

"Tadasuki! Good work capturing this enemy! Return here at once!"

"So much for the first hours of the day..." he said under his breath.

"P-p-please don't kill me..."

"Answer some questions and we'll let you leave"

"I think we're knee deep into some shit with the Vice-Prez..."

S: "Phew, that blade scared me"

"Yeah I felt that, what is it? is it that different from Kiryuin's?"

S: "Call it instinct... but if that thing touches me... I know i'll go to sleep, permanently"

"You'll die?!"

S: "Basically, but it's really difficult to explain..."

"I don't get ya but if that thing is that powerful then we'll need to get stronger before we fight him again."

S: "..."

"We're doing this! Dammit!"

S: "Then I demand an ironing every night until then!"

"Ugh! fine!"

---

Sanageyama took Scylla to the interrogation cell while I went to the meeting room with everyone else. Upon arriving, the others were staring at the empty window.

"Sooo... they saw me..."

"Yes but I also got questions for you!" Iori was the first one to speak, Satsuki sat gracefully at her chair in the middle of the room.

"Bout what?"

"Izanami! How did you got it?! I'm more than sure it exploded a couple of months ago!"

"What do you mean how? You gave it to me. You called me to tell me she was ready to be equipped."

"I never did that!"

"But you did though..."

"When?!"

"A couple of days after Mato's fight with Lady Satsuki..."

"Impossible! I was making the new two stars clubs uniforms by then!"

"Then who was it? I'm more than sure that it was you, only you could've sewn it into my uniform..."

"Thanks for the compliment but for now I must make many studies on it!"

"Calm down Iori"

"T-thanks Lady Satsuki"

"First i'll have a long conversation with him, then you can do whatever you want with him"

Nonon finally returned from her trance "SR. LIZARD WHAT IN THE... WORLD WAS THAT?!"

"Just beat the shit out of an enemy, what did I do wrong?"

"Don't give me that cr-! You could've been more gentle with my clones y'know!"

"They are enemies, I'm sorry but I won't"

"And what about Satsu-"

\*click\*

"Enough Jakuzure!"

"Y-yes"

"Once Gamagoori's mind returns, tell him to do both his and Tadasuki's guard"

"Yes!"

"And you Tadasuki, come to my room, there's things we need to talk in private..."

"Huh..." I was confused but eventually answered "Will do Lady Satsuki!"

"The Lizard done fucked up fufu" I barely heard Nonon say that.

We both went into Satsuki's chambers. I have no idea what she really wants by talking in private, it could be just a report but those can be done in documents. So it may be a scolding, but she usually

does them in public, no to mention that I did not disobey any orders... I think.

She sat on her chair, there wasn't one for me. Then she turned her back to me, what the fuck did i do?!

"Kai..."

"Yes!" better not anger her anymore...

There was an awkward silence that lasted a couple of seconds, but it felt like an eternity.

"(Blade... Empress... Kiss...)"

She sighed "How did you come into the possession of the Izanami" she still did not looked at me.

"Well, like I told Shiro, a couple of days after You fought with Mato I received a call from him, telling me that it was finished, so I went into the vault and he assembled it into the Assault Regalia... was it wrong? (Then again I never had permission to develop Izanami in the first place...)"

"No, while i was upset that you didn't told me when you started this project, it was a good idea and I left you two to continue its development..."

"Then... (Shit! nothing else comes to mind...)"

"I want to know how you felt fighting the clones..."

"... I can't say it felt different than with any other enemy I've fought, I aim to decimated as always..." She knows that's how i always fight. Inumuta once described it as a Switch in personality: Lay Back with friends and Really Aggressive against enemies with no in between.

"I see... then i ask a different question, what should be do about Scylla?"

"Interrogation is a must and when we do get everything we can out of her we should let her go, if proven it won't cause any problems in the future"

"Agreed... one last question, and i want you to be honest about it"

"Of course! (Aw shit!)"

"Did you... like what the clone did?" She stuttered a bit, that's a first...

"... Excuse me? (She can't be talking about...)"

"Answer" I could not see her face but i knew she was mad.

"Eh? well I cannot say that what Your Clone did felt at all wrong... but it was a fake so..."

"I see. Iori must be getting impatient, go with him, you're not to step outside until the Izanami has been fully analyzed and Scylla interrogated!"

Those words hit my head like cold water, making me forget any conclusions about anything that just happened.

"I will Lady Satsuki!"

I bowed and left her chambers, as i opened the door, i found Nonon and Shiro trying to act natural. I knew they were just outside trying to peek, but i don't think they heard anything. Gamagoori was still frozen and Inumuta was typing really fast.

"Oh! You're still alive Mr. Lizard, what happened?"

"I've been put on a leash..."

"That ought to teach ya not to pick a fight with anyone that attacks the School"

"C'mon is not like I could just leave them be..."

"Then trust in us dammit... OY TOAD, IT'S ABOUT TIME YOU FREAKING COME BACK AIN'T IT?!" She slapped Gamagoori with her baton. He didn't move an inch but he was back.

"We'll be going if you all don't mind. Move your ass into the sewing club Kai" He said while pushing me towards the elevator. "You also hurry up Inumuta!"

"I'll be there in a bit, i found something Interesting about our prisoner..."

"Care to share it with the class?"

"You see... this 'Scylla' has actually been dead for a couple of years... Just like Izanagi..."

" *Undead* huh?" I couldn't help but said that out loud.

## The Dead do Tell Tales

"This doesn't make any sense! The surveillance camera at the vault clearly shows me mounting the Izanami to the Assault Regalia, but at the same time there is footage of when I was making the new Two-stars uniforms." Iori sat in front of a multi screen computer, watching a recording while we waited for Inumuta.

"Listen Shiro, I know this is like a big freaking deal, but I don't think that copy of you is an enemy."

"You know that is not my only concern! I saw the Izanami blow up with my very own eyes two months ago and now it's right there in your right arm"

"Well it's not like I'm going anywhere anytime soon, so you two will have all the time in the world to analyze both the Izanami and Scylla"

"You gonna step in for the Interrogation won't you?"

"Of course, you two get really tactless when it's about data and don't act like you weren't gonna ask me to do it anyway"

Shiro let out a sigh and as if he was being summoned, Inumuta appeared from the elevator doors.

"Sorry for the delay, but there's interesting info on our prisoner"

"Let's get moving to the Test area, We first need to see what exactly is up with the Izanami"

We walked for a couple of minutes and reached the test area. This is where the new uniforms are tested before they are sent out. I went in alone while these two data maniacs stayed behind a bulletproof glass typing away.



"So what was it Inumuta?!" I asked him as I lie down in a metal bed and a red light goes up and down me scanning by body and uniform.

"No need to scream, Tadasuki"

"If I don't you two ain't gonna say a thing the entire time I'm staying here"

"Touche" said Irori without looking away from the screen. "Just make sure no to move too much."

"Then I'll start, as I said before, Scylla has been dead for a couple of years by now, the cause of death was buried alive by a landslide, very different from Izanagi's"

"So can we say that their cause of death has nothing to do with them being revived?"

"No for certain yet, but we'll see that later when we Interrogate our prisoner"

"Continue then"

"Scylla, the original one, died at age of 15, The same as Izanagi"

"Then we'll be fighting revived brats? Actually, scratch that, that sounds way too mean."

"Too late Tadasuki, anyway, Scylla was completely different from Izanagi, she was a normal School Girl who decided to take the long way on the wrong day, no criminal record of any kind and good grades, so other than their age, we have no real clue what their pattern is for reviving people..."

"Wow wow, you gotta see this Inumuta" Shiro interrupted.

"What is it-whoa, amazing!"

"What y'all found?!"

"You know how Bakuzan is made out of **Ultra-Hardened Life Fibers**?"

"Yeah, that's what we were making Izanami from..."

"Well, our scanning reveals that the Izanami is made out of **Ultra-Hardened Undead Fibers** "

"Sounds cool and ominous, what else?"

"I expected you to be a bit more startled, but whatever"

"Hey, you were the ones who told me not to move"

"Fair enough" he adjusted his glasses. "We have no absolute certainty as to what this really means, but it's at least as sharp as Bakuzan, not to mention that transformation into your claws, this has turned into quite the favorable paranormal event"

"Like you believe in ghosts"

"I obviously don't, but someone worked on the Izanami, if we could figure out who and/or how did it, we could upgrade our arsenal to incredible heights"

"So what you sayin is that we can't duplicate it?"

"No right now, after all we have no info on how the Undead Fibers are actually created"

"You can get off Tadasuki, the scan revealed no damage to your body, mind or uniform, quite intriguing how this all works..."

"Well if there's nothing else to scan, then to the interrogation room"

"Agreed"

After adjusting my uniform we all walked to where Scylla was being held, as we got closer, we could hear someone crying, a female

voice. We rushed to the inside.

"What happened?!" I asked while Iori and Inumuta watched.

Sanageyama had this tired look on his face, being done with the babysitter role he told us that she was hungry and then left really fast.

"(Real smooth Sanageyama...)"

Scylla realized who I was and immediately forced herself to stop crying, Covering her mouth with her hands.

"We are here only to ask you some questions, you don't need to be scared (Food... Blood... Happy)"

"Y-yes..."

"Here, figured it could come in handy" Inumuta gave me a tablet with a questionnaire on it.

"Iori, while you are on your way to get the machines, get her something to eat, will you?"

"Fine, get her to cooperate" Iori left and Inumuta got closer to Scylla, she naturally curled herself up.

"Give us a second, Inumuta"

"Okay..." he rolled his eyes and stepped back. Scylla now was more relaxed but still scared.

"Scylla, my name is Kai Tadasuki, call me Kai"

"Kai..."

"Yes, I'm going to ask you some questions, please answer the best you can, do not worry if you can't respond, just tell me you don't know and we'll move on, ok?"

"... Ok..." Her stomach grumbled and the mood got better if only a little. Inumuta wrote down the fact that she need to eat, or feels hungry at the very least. A knock is heard behind me, lori returned with the food. "(That was fast...)"

"Here it is..."

A meal from the cooking club, did Sanageyama called them over and got it all in place... maybe not but whatever.

"Thanks lori, give us a minute alone please"

They went out to the side room with the One-way mirror and left me alone with Scylla. I put the tray of food in front of her and she starts eating slowly, but picks up the pace after the first bite. In the middle of munches I ask the first question.

"As I told you, my name is Kai, what's yours?"

"... Scylla Shirogane... Mari?"

"What is it?" She stopped eating.

"Scylla is my name, but i remember another name..."

"Mari? Who's she?"

"Don't know..."

"Is okay, let me ask you another question: How old are you? I myself am 19 years old"

"I'm fifteen..."

"How did you know about Honnouji?"

"?!"

"Remember something?"

"Yes! Mari! She was the one who told me about Honnouji"

"Do you happen to remember what'd she told you?"

"She told me that if I wanted to go back to my world I have to get the 'She who Invites,' Mari also told me that I'll knew what I was looking for when I saw it..."

"I see, please keep eating, is it tasty?"

"Very much, Thank you!" She smiled, her yellow teeth showed no signs of being actually damaged.

"How did Mari looked like?"

"I don't know, I've never saw her..."

"How did you created those clones I fought?"

"Oh..."

"I'm not mad, you can just tell me"

"... Mari... She left this dress where i woke up..." She pointed to her dark purple and red Sailor uniform. "When I put it on I somehow knew how to make them... so I stole clothes and made them into those mannequins..."

"Clothes?"

"Yes, right now I can see that what you're wearing has the material to make them"

"Oh, you mean Life Fibers"

"Yes! Those!"

"So are your clones made out of Life Fibers?"

"I guess..."

"You don't actually know?"

"No"

"Is okay, can you make another one?"

"I don't think so, those took me a lot of time and when this ribbon doesn't vibrate I cannot work on them" She pointed again at her clothes, this time specifically to the ribbon around the neck flap.

"How curious... say, you mentioned 'when you woke up' when and where was it exactly?"

"... I... I woke up inside an abandoned building on the land that is connected to this city a couple of months ago, I heard Mari's voice while I was asleep, and then i opened my eyes to that dusty place..."

"Do you remember anything before you went to sleep?"

"Now that you mention it... I was on my way to school, I remember it being a friend's Birthday, so I went out even though it was pouring and I fell asleep somewhere along the way... that is... why I want to get the 'She who Invites' back to Mari... sorry..."

"(So if they want to be 'returned' this Mari gives them a motive to hunt Izanami down, why does she wants it though? that is, if Scylla hasn't been lying this entire time...) Do not worry about it, however" She got all tense "Remember the guys that were with me just a couple of minutes ago? Well they're my friends and want to give you a thorough examination, will you let us do it?"

Scylla was watchful "..."

"They won't hurt you, I'll make sure of that I'm also going to stay here the entire time."

"O-okay..."

"About time, Tadasuki" Inumuta rushed in with a couple of machines with him, I have rarely seen them so I don't really know what they do. There is a smaller version of the big scanner they used on me though.

"Don't be mean to her will you? I think she has had enough with me"

"No promises"

Scylla got scared again.

"He's Joking" I tell her to calm her down. "Please do not fight them, they do not want to hurt you either, they want to know who are you"

"Okay..." she extended her hand out and the small scanner ran through her whole arm.

"Thanks, now would you kindly answer some more questions?"

"Sure... I-I don't mind..."

"Good girl, then: Do you know what a ***Kamui*** is?"

"Yes, is like a uniform made entirely out of the thingies I use for the Mannequins"

"Did Mari told you?"

"No, it was Izanagi, he knew what they were and he told me..."

"Are there more like you two?"

"I'm not sure, I met him by chance a couple of days before you fought... I knew he was like me, trapped in this world and he just wanted to go back... I think..."

"Does it looks different to you when you see my uniform as when you see your own?"

"Yes, yours has four long threads, mine has them all over it, but they do not shine like yours"

"(So her uniform is a Kamui made of Undead Fibers, interesting... so Izanagi's wasn't actually a fake Kamui)"

Inumuta and Iori were scanning Scylla's body in complete silence, almost like they weren't there.

"Can you take it off?"

"Wha-wha-wha-what?!"

"I want to examine it, not now of course, later when we are done talking."

I could see the faces of the two maniacs there going 'Good job!' and I let out a mental sigh.

"Yeah... If it helps you I can..."

"Excellent, I will now take my leave- actually, nevermind..." I'll stay until they are done analyzing her and discuss what we found after, it's not like I can go out after all...

We continued analyzing her and I kept her distracted with idle chatter. Finally they were done with her and left like if someone was chasing them, I assume towards a big screen to properly analyze the data.

"I have to follow them, hope you don't mind"

"I don't, but could you please come back? this place is scary..."

"And what makes you think I'm not?" I say jokingly.

"Well you are scary... but not so much when you just talk, also, did you call yourself the Dragon of Honnouji? what does that mean?"



"I-I'll tell you next time, I'll have someone bring you something to keep you distracted, Later!"

"La-ter..." I heard her say in a very low sad voice and I take off to where the two mad geniuses went.

"Hey Databrains, found something good?"

"Indeed, mainly that she has no heartbeat or blood in her body either."

"So she is like a walking corpse..."

"Kinda, there is brain activity, thus she is half alive if that makes some sense"

"And what you two think about this 'Mari'?"

"No clue, but I'll found out, perhaps there is something on the place she 'woke' up, I'll have someone go check on them when i find them."

"Naturally there's a high chance that she was lying... Then again her story matched the one Inumuta found." Iori remarked what everyone knew as the basics, but it's good to go back to them every once in a while.

"What do you think Tadasuki?"

"This 'Mari' is the enemy and deceives the ones she revives, allegedly, so they can hunt down the 'She Who Invites' for an unknown purpose. The ones that revive are also very different from normal humans as they can see life fibers in plain sight for starters."

"Agreed, there is also the possibility of this Mari sending someone to tie loose ends, so we should be keeping an eye on Scylla at all times."

"You do it, Tadasuki"

"I have to be the babysitter huh?"

"Don't act like you have anything else to do, we will give you a spare Goku Uniform though, we do not want her charming you into give her the Izanami"

"Very funny Inumuta"

"Now please leave us, there is a lot we have to analyze!"

"Have fun you two..."

"Will do Kai!"

Is not like they are at all wrong. Doubt this Mari will send some weakling to shut Scylla up so normal guards are out of the question, I have also repealed both attacks from them so far, so it makes sense they would appoint me as guard...

"(I'll go get her some normal clothes and desk for myself... I will still be doing paperwork... and not even near Satsuki for a good while... Fuck!)"

I change to a special One-Star uniform and return to the Interrogation room, the couple of One-Star guards around left, they'll be only nuisances if an enemy does show up.

"Scylla! you there?"

"Oh, Kai! You're back!"

She sounds really excited. Did I scared her into submission? I mean, that'd be the perfect scenario, but I don't think I went that hard on her when we fought, did I?

"Yep, and I brought you some new clothes, would you kindly change into these?" I said as i entered the room. She was drawing something on the table with her fingernail, maybe is another skill these revived ones have?

"Ah..." She was a little stunned and erased her drawing after a couple of seconds.

"What was it you were scribbling?"

"Nothing!" She was nervous, I better check the footage later just to be sure it wasn't some sort of message.

"This will be your new clothes for a while, I'll go outside and wait for you to change" I placed the no star female uniform I brought with me on the table and started to walk out.

"Oh! You're not wearing that uniform"

"Disappointed?" I tell a joke with a smile.

"N-n-not at all..." What.

"Either way, please be a good girl and put this on, after that we'll wait for my friends to take your Kamui for some tests, ok?"

"Ok, you will stay with me while we wait, right?"

"Yeah and from now on I'll be right outside if you need anything, you won't be able to leave this room after all..."

"I see..." She lowered her head.

"You still want to go back, no?"

"Yeah..."

"You already knew what happened to you..."

"... Yes..." She grasped the No-Star uniform. "I died that day long ago... I wanted to go back... to see them again, to think this was all a cruel dream, but a dragon woke me up from that dream and dropped me into another..."

"(Me? So I made her realize that she could not go back, so she surrender... I've seen similar cases but this one's far to extreme...)"

"So I want to help you find Mari..."

"We'll talk more once you take the Kamui off..."

"Yes" She looked a little sad.

I stepped outside and waited for her to change clothes.

"Uwah" She sounded tired.

"What happened?"

"Nothing, is just that it feels weird taking it off after all this time..."

"Then, you're done?"

"Yeah, you can come in..."

I open the door and she was still on the chair, like if the Uniforms had just switched places.

"Amusing..." One of my thoughts escaped me.

"T-Thanks..." She blushed, how? I thought she had no blood inside of her.

"Allow me to get to the point, Why is it really that you're helping us?"

"I want to find Mari and ask her why she choose me to revive..."

"... What do you gain from that?"

She fell silent for a second and her voice started to sound otherworldly, like they were two voices speaking at the same time.

"It's cold all the time, I have no need to eat or sleep yet I still feel them and even if she can truly revive me... there is nothing left for me back home. I want to know why do I have to go through this cursed existence..."

When she was done she turned her head away from me.

"I see what you mean, you want answers from the one that put you into this mess... I know how you feel"

"Huh?"

---

"Long story, but I still have no answers myself... not that I care anymore... (I going to trust her for now)"

"I see..."

"Scylla Shirogane!"

"Yes! (Did I said something wrong?!)"

"You want answers! So do we! Help us get ours and Honnouji Academy will help with yours! Become our ally!"

"You... you serious? (He's the first one to offer me help since I was revived...)" She was about to cry.

"You little stunt did no damage to Honnouji, but you still must work and make yourself a name here with us! (I think that's good enough, now let's see what she has to say)"

"I will aid you in whatever you need! (If this takes me closer to Mari, I will serve them if necessary!)"

"Good, from now you are part of Honnouji, sadly, you have to stay here for a while but I can assure you, that if you help us you will be rewarded! (Hope Satsuki is fine with that...)"

---

After that little bit of fun, someone knocked on the door and without any delay between them the door opened.

"Quite Inspiring, Tadasuki" Iori enters the room.

"Here for the Kamui?"

"Yes, for that and for the desk you asked for, it's waiting outside..."  
That was a their way to say 'we want to talk in private,' the found something.

"I'll go check it, I'll leave for a bit again Scylla"

"Is okay!"

"(She got her energy back, good)"

Iori went in with a couple of machines that took the Kamui and placed it on a movable table, then the One-Star grunts took it away. He stayed and dropped a couple of documents on the desk after it was done being moved to the inside of the One-way Mirror room.

"Kai, we found something you should be aware of"

"What is it?"

"The Izanami somehow does not want to leave your uniform"

"What do you mean?"

"Just as it sounds, We tried to take the Izanami out of the Assault Regalia but it did not come off"

"I assume you already tried to unsewn it... This just gets more interesting by the minute, wouldn't you agree?"

"Once we are done with the Kamui we might know what the Undead Fiber really are and become the strongest we have ever been... I trust you know what that means..."

"Of course... soon all japan will be ours!"

The next couple of days I received a document about the Matoi's Fighting Club, this Mankanshoku girl as the leader... bold move Matoi. Apparently it was a success, I did A LOT of demotions those days, all of them involved Matoi. I gotta say: Good Job.

I talked with Gamagoori about it, apparently Mankanshoku was really close to becoming Three-star by the book alone. While that would've been fun, that ain't happening... Matoi won't let her... hehe.

During that time I got Scylla a sketchbook, I asked her to draw what how she saw the uniforms and we talked about what she likes. Listen, I gotta entertain myself somehow, I been here for god-knows how many days straight and I bet she feels the same.

We played some games and talked about who were the ones she copied, she apparently didn't know a thing of them. She also explained what her plan to get the Izanami was.

Relatively simple, she made clones of everyone, mine was supposed to be there as well, but she ran out of material. She wanted them to infiltrate the Academy and find out where we kept the Izanami and I would've work for for a while but the Mannequins activated on their own, she only knows that it has to do with me since they moved by themselves to attack me.

"Who is the long haired girl?"

"Lady Satsuki?"

"Well yeah I know her name and that she is like the Queen of Honnouji. But barely anything else."

"She is the strongest woman I've ever met and the one who made me who I am now"

"Woah"

"She doesn't fear anything and there's nothing she won't do when it comes to fulfilling her ambitions..."

"You like her don't you?"

"You get rather aggressive with the questions fast, but yes, I do"

"I see..." She looked discouraged.

"But she has no time for these things, neither do I, so all I can do is follow her orders, though she does think of me quite highly if I do say so myself."

"So she recognizes your strength and loyalty..."

"She is also stronger than me so don't mess with her" Perhaps I should talk less, all that happens in here is being recorded after all.

We heard a big boom coming from way up. Something happened. I got up from the chair and I walked out. I got in contact with Iori.

"What was that?!"

"Don't worry Tadasuki, it was just the Fighting Club being dissolved"

"What?"

"All you need to know now is that the Club Matoi was part of is no more, I'll get you the details later, I think you are gonna have fun with this one"

"Ok...?"

I read the report of what happened with Matoi and Mankanshoku, indeed it was fun, but what was more important, the "Restart" was about to begin. Interesting.



## **Dawn In the Mind of the Dragon**

The next days were going to be an all out war throughout Honno City. A chance for getting a high rank for yourself, for Me and the rest of the guys is more like an excuse for vacation than a war, sadly I'm stuck here with scylla. I'll still get to beat some ass, Some one-stars will try to get here but they'll be no match.

It would seem that Satsuki liked that I managed to make Scylla an ally, since she told me that my sentence was shortened, then again I was going to stay until further notice so I don't think it really did much...

"Seven days of chaos..."

"What? Why?"

Scylla heard me through the intercom, she doesn't know I'm in the room next to her's, so I got this in order to get recorded anything we say during this time.

"Well let me tell you what I got out of what Lady Satsuki said- All of the student council, me and the other four guys you copied, will be treated as no-stars for the next week."

"..."

"I don't really get it myself but she is obviously planning something, she let everyone keep their goku uniforms, including me of course... though I haven't got it back yet"

"I don't understand a thing"

"Let me finish, after those seven days, everyone that makes it to school will participate in some sort of tournament and make themselves a name there, no need to tell you that there will be at least five people there"

"So what's gonna happen until then?"

"Chaos and destruction basically, no need to worry, The worst you gonna get will be some noise"

"I see..."

I haven't gotten any reports from any of those Databrains regarding Izanami and her Kamui... what's taking them so long?!

I take a bite of the nutrient bar out of frustration and hear my phone ring, it's Satsuki. I cut the connection with Scylla's Walkie Talkie and answer.

"Yes Lady Satsuki!"

"Kai, how is everything going down there?"

"Pretty well, I heard practically nothing from the anarchy that I'm sure started already"

"That's good and our new ally?"

"She is also doing well, haven't got attacked by anyone trying to tie loose ends and seems pretty honest, thought we are getting a little bored..."

She let a small laugh that melted me, but let's get back to the real world.

"Then do you think it's time to let her go?"

"Well..." I turn to see Scylla "As things are outside right now she'll be much safer here... on the other hand..."

"You want out of there, right?"

"Guilty"

"Just like the Elite Four you have complete freedom to do whatever you want these seven days. I don't think you need me to wish you luck"

"It's welcomed though... and as I see things now, you're up there just making sure no one gets you... so there's really no point in free time for me right now"

"We can still talk like this"

"I'll like it far more if it were with a cup of tea on the meeting room Lady Satsuki. But is okay, I'll earn that myself next week!"

"Satsuki"

"Huh?"

"When is only the both of us you call me just Satsuki, understood?"

"Y-yes! Satsuki..." We have been doing that for some time by now. I wanted to make sure I don't mess up somewhere else and call her Lady Satsuki for a while, but that also got me a lil bit of trouble...

"Back to what I really wanted to discuss, Your battle with Scylla"

"Yes, what exactly? I feel a little bad talking about this with Scylla right here but sure"

"She's there?!"

"On the other room, I'm looking over her after all"

"Very well... What I wanted to discuss was what the clones told you when they first showed up"

"I see, that still makes no sense to me, Scylla also doesn't seem to know"

---

"Satsuki"

"Huh?"

"When is only the both of us you call me just Satsuki, understood? (Wait, why did I said that?)"

"Y-yes! Satsuki..."

"Back to what I really wanted to discuss, Your battle with Scylla"

"Yes? what exactly? I feel a little bad talking about this with Scylla right here but sure"

"She's there?! (Why?!)"

"On the other room, I'm looking over her after all"

"Very well... (Right...) The part I want to discuss was what the clones told you when they first showed up"

"I see, that still makes no sense to me, Scylla also doesn't seem to know"

Satsuki told Kai about the Nightmares they all had, she didn't told her own one, instead she said that they will discuss that one in person.

"Wow! The Gamagoori one gave me the chills, but how are they tied to the Mannequins exactly?"

"That's what I want to find out, both Iori and Inumuta have been busy analyzing Scylla's odd Kamui and preparing for today that there hasn't been real time to get on the subject"

"I see, so the constants Inumuta checked, assuming they also fit your nightmare, are: Me, my right arm and the red wind"

"Yes, what's your verdict?"

"Well the red wind is the red sand that Scylla invoked then, Me is me and on the right arm..."

"The Izanami"

"Naturally, but why in those nightmare was I so aggressive? It doesn't make sense, I mean they were all close friends, but if Scylla wanted to get specifically in my head, there was going to be one me, of Matoi and one of Omi- Hakodate as well... so I don't think I was being targeted..."

"Oh, interesting, care to explain in detail? (Hakodate... !)"

"Yes, If Scylla had made me as her Target, there was probably going to be some sort of psychological attack involving them as well as the Elite Four, its effectiveness is something I can't say for sure but in the worst scenario I would've still pushed through"

"I know you would" Satsuki took a sip of tea. "You are like that..."

"Thank you very much Satsuki"

"The Izanami did not damaged you from what I heard"

"It didn't but how it transformed is something we still cannot figure out, it was originally just a prototype for creating more weapons like Bakuzan should we ever need them and is still a mystery as to who worked on the Izanami that is currently bound to my uniform"

"Bound?"

"Yes, the Izanami cannot be unmounted, doing so will tear the Assault Regalia to shreds, that's what Iori told me"

"I haven't heard that... curious"

"Then unless the Spider messed up somewhere..."

"There's someone unwanted in the web"

"Exactly, how do we deal with this?"

"We can leave it be, at worst it attacks you and that will be a more than acceptable outcome"

"You make it sound like you don't want me here, but I get what you mean"

"I'll leave you to your work, Good Luck Kai"

"Thanks and I'll talk to you Later, Satsuki"

The call ended and Satsuki took a look around her, not even Soroi who she told to stay outside for a bit was there. The only other living thing on that room was Junketsu, who stayed completely still.

"(God! what did i said those things?! 'Just Satsuki'...)"

She took a couple of seconds to wash off that embarrassment and returned to her composed self and analyze the serious stuff they talked about.

"(He was not being targeted, an intruder and the bound Izanami... this is getting serious, if I had this information beforehand I would've delayed the Natural Selections... while both attackers have been weak, they have disguise skills. Not even Kai could tell the difference from the fake Iori after all... However Kai does not think this fake Iori is an enemy...)"

"May I come in, Lady Satsuki?"

"Yes Soroi, I need another cup"

"At once"

---

"I'll leave you to your work, Good Luck Kai"

"Thanks and I'll talk to you Later, Satsuki"

The call ended and I took some time to process. Their Nightmares, the attack and... Satsuki... wait no come back.

\*blip blip\*

Scylla's intercom finally reached my ears, it was trying to communicate the entire time I was talking with Satsuki but I gave it little importance.

"Sorry Scylla, important matters..."

"Thank God! I got worried you were attacked or something!"

"I told you, the only ones that can beat me are: Satsuki and maybe if two of the Elites go all out on me, there's no need for you to fear for me"

"Let me worry about you! You're my friend after all"

"Friend... huh"

"Anyway, got something cool?"

"Obviously, nothing I can tell you"

"You're no fun when she's involved" She pouted and looked away from the radio.

"Well when I work I'm supposed to be efficient, not fun..."

She got angrier and put her back towards the radio. She reminded me of Nonon.

The phone rang again

"(Speak of the devil...) I'll be back"

"Hey! We're not done tal-"

"What's up Jakuzure?"

"What's this? Lizard's upset" I only call her by her last name when I'm angry.

"Kinda, what you need?"

"Just wanted to make sure you're not gonna make any moves when we're gone fufu"

"You know I'm stuck down here with Scylla" She's just teasing like usual.

"What you gonna do this Seven days?"

"Don't know yet, If I get too far away from the girl she may be attacked..."

"When did you get so soft Mr. Lizard"

"It's for the mission, if it were anyone else I'll probably just leave"

"You sure she hasn't charm you yet?"

"Very funny Jakuzure"

"It's my trademark after all"

"You can go have fun, Satsuki locked herself up, I'm basically shackled to Scylla down here and there's nothing really interesting for me out there..."

"You don't have any hobbies?! Even the Big Toad took off on his own car"

"He got it already? Sounds fun"

"Anyway you should leave the girl alone for a while and get working on a real hobby that ain't work. You gave her a way to contact you,



didn't you? So you should be good"

"..."

"What's this?! Did I got you this time?!" I could feel her smugness through the phone. Well she is right, Scylla doesn't know I'm right on the next room and she already has a phone to call me anywhere anytime...

"I'll think about it, even your playfulness is useful every once in a while, thanks Nonon"

"What's that supposed to mean?!"

"Later"

"He-"

I hang up and decided to go into Scylla's room. I knock the door and go in without delay. She was looking away from me, obviously mad at me...

"Sorry about that..."

"Hmph!"

"If it makes you feel better, we have permission to leave"

"What?" She blushed again, how in the world does she does that?!

"With all the chaos going on outside we were given green light to leave..."

"So..."

"We're making a pit stop before leaving Honnouji for a while, actually... let me rephrase that..."

"..."

"We're going for our uniforms, after that I'm taking a trip outside of Honnouji and you're coming with me, got that?"

"Yes! but why leave? You're not gonna fight?"

"There's no need, because 1: We're getting attacked anyways and 2: I'm making it to the next week, whether anyone likes it or not"

"You can be cool when you try to..."

"What was that?" I actually heard it clearly, but I have the feeling she did not want me to hear that.

"Nothin!"

"Then let's go!"

We left towards the lab where both of our uniforms should be located. I'll talk with Iori if I find him... Oh! it seems we're in luck.

"Shiro! How u doin?"

"Ah, Kai and Scylla, You two finally decided to get together?"

"Don't try to pull a Nonon on me now... We're here for our uniforms, do you mind?"

"Nah, though let me make put a special device on them, we haven't had time to analyze them properly, but when you two get back it'll be full of helpful extra data"

"I guess... You okay with that Scylla?"

"Yes, I have no problem"

"Then get to it"

"Thank you very much"

We walked a bit more and got in front of the lab where both the Assault Regalia and Scylla's Kamui, now named "The Hound," were. Interestingly enough, Izanami was showing even though it didn't transformed.

"Is that supposed to happen?"

"Yeah, don't worry, we left a camera and let it out to see if anything happened, but nothing at all"

"I see..." I had more things to talk with Shiro, but not in front of Scylla.

After a couple of button press a mechanical arm came down and sew something into both the Uniforms' insides.

"You automated these, quite interesting..."

"It was so anyone could do it, I could do it better, faster and easier myself if I wanted to, but doesn't matter right now, we are taking them off soon anyway... They're ready, you can take them off from there"

"Thank you very much Shiro, anything we need to know before we leave?"

"You are taking you phone with you? If anything happens more than a couple of people would like to know"

"Of course, is not like I'm running away, these are just days off"

"Days off..."

"Have anything in mind Scylla? a place you want to visit?"

"Not really... I've already went everywhere I wanted before getting here..."

"Then how about the Beach?" I like to swim but barely get a chance to since I have to keep my uniform on at all times.

"Sounds... Nice..."

"Didn't knew you liked it, Kai"

"Tried a couple of times when we were Conquering other schools, it was fun to swim, though now that I think about it, it may not be a good idea, I'll have to take my uniform off for swimming..."

"You worry too much sometimes... and sometimes not enough... this time is the former, I'm sure you can beat anyone dumb enough to fight you even without your Uniform. Not to mention that you are going to keep it close to you at all times"

"Thanks for the compliment, Haha!"

Scylla watched in silence. I'm sure she felt dragged, because she was. But for a different reason that what she thinks. She thinks this is for keeping an eye on her but in reality it's because I'm selfish, if anything happen to her or her Kamui I'll be responsible for that. I'm sure Satsuki knew that but told me to leave anyway to test me.

"How you getting there?"

"I'll take one of the bikes from the biker club, I had them make one just for fun"

"Interesting but now if you have nothing else to say then I ask that you get on your way, It's about to get dicey in here in a while"

"Why?"

"I also have to fight as well as several other, more personal, experiments"

"Fine, fine, we'll leave, Make sure you tell Lady Satsuki about all this will ya?"

"She might already know, try no to run into Matoi while you're out there"

"No promises, is an all-out war out there"

"Don't say I didn't warn you, have fun then Kai, you too Scylla"

"Yes..."

Just in case I called Satsuki and told her my plans myself, I passed her test by the looks of it. "Lovely" she said my plan sounded... I'm still confused about it. But the point was that she seemed to approve and with our uniforms and the bike we'll reach the beach in no time at all.

"Time for some free time! Ready?!"

"Ye-wah!"

I didn't let her finish speaking before I rev up and we come out to the courtyard blowing some one-stars away, some other tried to attack us and got in front of the bike. Borrowing a technique and bamboo sword from Sanageyama dojo I quickly hit them out of the way and send them flying against the walls. But after that there was still a mountain of bodies blocking the entrance.

"You guys could've been a little tidier..."

I speed up and raise the front wheel up a little, we're riding the mountain. At its top one of the brutes from the American Football club appears, claiming we ain't going nowhere.

"Nothing but empty threats from a Pig!"

He stops the bike with his whole body and give me this stupid grin. Oh it's on, fucker.

He is struggling against the bike strength, I simply get up and walk on top of the bike to reach this guy's face and as he tries to punch

me...

***"Inazuma no Ato!" (After the lightning!)***

Far weaker than if I had transformed the Assault Regalia but still delivered. The mountain of bodies disappeared as they all went flying in different directions along with the guy that tried to stop us. The bike was suspended in the air for a couple of seconds and started to fall to the ground.

"Kai!"

Scylla reached for me but when she noticed I was back in the seat.

"Don't scare me like that..."

"You're gonna have to do something with that faint heart of yours if you wanna be a part of Honnouji, girl!"

"O-okay..." she was really quiet.

"Let's work on it now!"

"WhaaaaaaaaaaaaaaaaaH!"

I took a shortcut. Instead of going around the school and taking the spiral down to the bridge I jumped straight from the front to one of the sections of the spiral bridge.

But i didn't stopped there, I keep going forward once we landed, going for another jump! This one far more difficult, better speed up even more!

"ANOTHER ONE?!"

We jump.

I took a glance at her, she was enjoying it and we both start laughing. It's about time!

We land on the next one and I intend to keep going, but we're not gonna make it to the next one in a simple jump, that's what the roofs of the Two-Star district are for!

After quite the mess, we reach the Bridge that connects Honnouji with Japan. I stop and look back at the School.

"It's been a good while since last I stepped outside of Honno city... I already miss it..."

"Oh hell no! You promised me Ice cream!"

"Heh, you right... Let's go!"

"WAIT A MINUTE TADASUKI!" This time it wasn't Scylla the one who yelled at me.

"Who in the-?!"

I see someone also riding out of Honnouji, two girls in a scooter.

"Ah Matoi, good to see you!"

"Can't really say the same Tadasuki, running away are we?"

"Speak for yourself!"

"OH, isn't that the girl you captured the other day, Vice-Prez?" Mankanshoku spoke out of nowhere, does this girl even knows her place... bah I'll care about it when I return. "OH?! Is she your girlfriend?!"

"You never know when to shut up huh? No she's not and whatever I'm doing does not concerns any of you"

They both had a look of confusion on their faces. They are not looking at me? wait, Scylla.

I turned to see her and she was hiding behind my cape. "(So it WAS that... I'll talk to her about it in private...) Anyway, where are you two running off to?"

"Like I'd tell you!"

"Don't worry Matoi, if it would come in handy I might've even offer you a ride, but you know how to defend yourself"

"Shut up and suit up! It's time to fight!"

"Nah, we'll just go if you don't mind. I have no reason to fight and for the first time in a while I'm looking forward to some fun"

I start driving away.

"Stop dammit!" They are following us in that little scooter yelling, barely any speed. I decide to slow down and wait for them.

After a couple of minutes they finally catch up I start driving slowly, matching their speed.

"Don't ignore me you ass!"

"I know i promised you a fight, but I technically delivered already and how about we settle it when we return? and Mankanshoku... Stop that" She was sneakingly trying to take some of our provisions, that sound like this is an expedition... She was stealing some of our food for the trip.

"Ah! He saw me"

"You weren't exactly silent about it... How about another deal? We let you off with that food and you let us go easy this time"

"Are you even gonna take this serious!-" Matoi's stomach grumbled

"... So?"



"Fine, but you better get ready for next week, I'm kicking all of you guys' asses!"

"I hope that isn't an empty threat! Matoi!" I accelerate, leave a cloud of dust and we lose them.

"That was fun!" Scylla talked "Who are they exactly? I know that girl is wearing a Kamui, it shines sooo much"

"She is Ryuko Matoi, she is trying to take down Honnouji because she thinks we killed her father and Satsuki keeps her around I don't really know why" That last part was a lie.

"Oh! and the other girl?"

"Mako Mankanshoku, her friend, I know little of her, no like it matters, she has more Stars on her uniform than brain inside her head. She even once got in the way of Satsuki's Blade and was saved by Matoi"

"Ryuko and Mako... Would you mind if I talked with them when we get back?"

"If they let you then all right, but I don't think you're getting anything out of them... each for different reasons"

"Haha! So you CAN say jokes haha!"

I smiled and speed up, we lost some time here we have to get it back!

---

From all over Honno city, the Elite four saw Kai's little stunt.

"Was that Kai?! I never knew he could make such a mess... I like it!" Sanageyama 'saw' Kai and Scylla make it alive to the bottom of Honno city in record time.

---

"Whoa! That looks fun! I'll have Mr. Lizard give me a ride next time!" Nonon was excited since she now knew how Kai has fun.

---

"Interesting, there is one of those devices on their uniforms... Thanks Tadasuki! This will prove fun for me as well..." Inumuta also didn't have too much planned and was thankful for having something for him while they're away.

---

"He knew how to drive?! I'm falling behind him again! I won't let him!" Gamagoori was the most competitive against Tadasuki so he once again vouched to defeat him.

---

At the top of Honno Tower

"Not bad Kai... Not bad..." Satsuki took a sip of tea and unconsciously rewatched the whole scene a couple of times.

---

A Dark and very tall tower light came from the last floor. A pale woman with ashen hair sat in front of a silver desk while rainbow lights illuminated the room.

Ragyo Kiryuin

"It would seem that my daughter's lap dog was let loose for a while..."

"May I pay him a visit?" Dark silhouette spoke, even with the rainbow lights it still looked like a living shadow.

"Have fun..." While she barely knew who or why this dark man wanted to, she allowed it. "Izanagi, was it?" This boy arrived by accident to one of REVOCS labs a while ago.

"Yes and thank you Lady Ragyo"



# Bloodhound

"So where exactly are we going, Kai?"

"No too far, to the Izu Peninsula in Shizuoka, We have plenty of places under our control there so is also practically free for us to stay there. It'll be around a two hours drive there"

"Oh, I've never been there! How is it?"

"To be honest I've also not been there, not for vacation at least. You've heard about Honnouji conquering other schools after all"

"Yeah, honestly I'm still scared of the other guys..."

"In any case we ain't stopping until we get there. I'm really looking forward to a long swim"

"... Hey..."

"What is it?"

"Could you tell me about the 'Dragon of Honnouji'?"

"Oh..." That is a bit of an embarrassing story... ah fuck it! "Is how many students call me back at home"

"Home?"

"At Honnouji Academy, that is my home"

"I see"

"Continuing, I got it actually from Lady Satsuki"

"How come?"

"It was the first time I was tasked with taking control of another school..."

That day it was me alone against like a gang of 100 dudes, the other guys were there as well but I was about to prove my real strength to everyone.

---

A courtyard of an abandoned school, filled with stereotypical gang teenagers. On the very center it stands alone a man wearing his jacket like a cape. Kai Tadasuki was about to show why he was part of the party that has been decimating other schools.

"You've been abandoned by your friends! Tadasuki was it?!"

They left to not hinder his movements, Kai said nothing back to the leader of this gang that tried to provoke him.

Far above them on the roof surrounding them, Five people stood. four skinny yet easily distinguishable from each other and a tall blonde man.

"C'mon let me go down there!"

"Do not be so hasty Sanageyama!" Satsuki shot him down "This is for him to show his growth. At worst we lose a pig, at best..."

"We get another big shot on our side, I like it" Nonon interrupted Satsuki to add her own take on why she ordered them to stay outside this fight.

"Mathematically speaking, he should be able to defeat them, that is, if he makes all the right moves and keep in that he is already capable of beating your ass Sanageyama" Inumuta spoke about the odds of the battle.

"If he is to fall here he never had the strength to join us!" Gamagoori stated loud and clear.

"Fine! But if he fails I will jump down there and beat some punk!"

"That is IF he does fail Sanageyama..." Satsuki said and everyone stood silently watching the battle unfold.

"What?! You mute or somethin?!"

"I simply have nothing to say to someone like you!" Kai stood still. "(I cannot use my steel claws by Satsuki's orders, but I can still beat them!)"

"So what's it gonna be?! You surrender and we let you leave Or the hard way?"

"Hmph"

"YOU ASSHOLE! GET HIM GUYS!"

"(Got you!)"

Five guys that were at the front charged at Kai. He did not move an inch. Sanageyama saw nothing with his eyes, it looked like Kai was completely calm and did not intended to move.

The five guys had different weapons, a Pipe, a Chain, a Bat, a Knife and brass knuckles. and as they jumped to hit Kai, they all were send back flying, Kai still did not move.

"Interesting..." Satsuki said.

"When did he?!" Sanageyama was stunned since he never saw Kai use his fighting spirit before.

"Impressing Tadasuki" Inumuta recorded this event.

"You're just copying Satsuki! Baka Tokage!" (Stupid Lizard)

Gamagoori said nothing and kept watching.

"What the fuck did you just did?!"

"Me? Nothing, they just stopped attacking" Kai shrugged and said with all the sarcasm in the world. Two punks took this chance to attack since they saw he had lowered his guard, or so they thought. Like if they had any plan on them, both with pipes attacked, one from the front and one to the back of Kai.

"We got you this time!"

\*Clank\*

Metal with metal.

The grin on the leader's face turned to confusion when Kai stopped both attacks with his forearms.

"Are you serious! This ain't even worth as warm up!"

"You-" One of the guys that was blocked by Kai tried to punch him but it was sent flying towards the crowd, knocking a couple of guys unconscious as well.

"FUCK IT! ALL AT THE SAME TIME BOYS!"

Like flies chasing garbage, they all jumped with countless weapons towards the single man in the middle. Their ally was still locked in melee with Kai.

"Fools!"

Kai grabbed the pipe he was blocking, and swung it together with the guy attached to it, making an opening for himself. Quickly jumping through it, the punks did not saw when he left.

When they started to look around they noticed that: One: their leader was gone, and Two: Kai was flying over their heads.

His image was something terrifying to the punks. His long jacket-cape was like a pair of wings, pretty sure most of them though "Demon!." Kai hold their leader like a sack of potatoes and when he saw that they had noticed him, he started to descend.

Some of them were waiting for him but it was a mistake. Doing a superhero landing Kai smashed the head of the leader on the ground and knocked away the ones near him, his cape still flying behind him like a pair of folded wings. His gaze, like that of a predator, froze the punk's souls.

"A Monster!" some of them screamed as they fled while some other were paralyzed by fear.

There was one person that could beat this monster but she wasn't on the battle. What went through her mind was something different, she didn't saw a demon or a monster.

"(Like a Dragon violently landing...)"

"Damn that Kai! Getting all the action for himself!"

Satsuki ignored Sanageyama's rant and stepped forward smacking Bakuzan on the ground.

"Good Work Tadasuki!" She shifted her own gaze to the punks that stayed behind "You worthless pigs just faced the Dragon of Honnouji! Stand for yourself or leave at once!" She slammed her sword again and the remaining ones of them started to run like rats, all in different directions.

After they all left, Satsuki and the others came down of the roof.

"(The Dragon huh... I'm still calling him lizard! It's far cuter!)"

"No fair I wanted that one!" Sanageyama complained.

"Keep quiet Kanto Monkey!"



"Quite amusing Tadasuki, this outcome was even better than what I predicted I could be!"

"When did you learn all that Tadasuki?!" Gamagoori asked what everyone wanted to know.

"Doesn't matter, what matter is that we won. You should also try to become stronger on your own accord Sanageyama"

"Wanna go again?!"

"Enough you two! We are moving to our next target!" Satsuki interrupted them.

"Yes Lady Satsuki!" All responded and walked away from the abandoned battlefield.

---

"Cool!"

"Thanks" Good, I managed to skip the part where I trip and fall.

Scylla out of nowhere got silent and moments later I understood why. We were being followed. The worst part was that they weren't even stealthy about it.

"Hey Mister Vice-President! I see you liked our newest model!"

The Bikers Club, they followed us by putting something in our bike I assume. They took their damn time. I'll thank them for letting me finish my story, but first...

"Kinda! It ain't the fastest but damn sure it's though!"

"Let's see how much that cocky attitude lasts!"

The seven bikers, one far bigger than the others, speed up and tried to surround us.

"You all could be more original you know?! Scylla!"

"Y-yes!"

"Get them!"

"But without the mannequins-"

"You can do it"

I look back at her and I notice that her face changed from scared, to determined then to confusion and back to determined again. Something happened inside her.

"Ready?!"

"Yeah!"

I drive to the side and start struggling with one of the bikes. Suddenly a thick black and red tentacle burst out of the other side of our bike, hitting one of the riders which sends him flying and explodes.

"Partner!" they yell.

The tentacle still out then charges at other one of the bikers. Now I see clearly a big detail on that tentacle it had a dog head at the very end.

"I knew you had it!"-I tell Scylla-"Still wanna got you idiots?" I kick the bike we were struggling with, it loses control and crashes. Three down, four to go.

"You'll pay for that! And your girl as well!"

That biker crashed mere second later after being struck with Scylla's attack.

"Choose your words carefully you pigs!" There are only three left, two one-stars and the leader. All of them in front of us, preventing us

from accelerating. "My turn!"

I transform only my right arm into the Assault Regalia, perks of a Four-stars. Summon my sword and transform it into a whip, following the theme imposed by Scylla. I swing it at one of the one-stars and pull him out of his seat I let him go while in mid air transforming the whip back into a sword.

"Got get the last one-star girl!"

"Don't call me that..." I barely heard her but she still did it.

The dog tentacle jumped way overhead and crushed the last one-star on the road.

"(Her... Over... Dogs...)"

"Kai, I've got a plan" She whispered what she wanted me to do. Sounds fun!

"Got it!" I told her before yelling at the Two-Stars "Not giving up yet?!"

"AS IF ASSHOLE!"

"Now Kai!"

He let out a bunch of oil from the back of his bike. But before that I break and pull up the back of the bike, using my transformed arm I push your bike away from the ground so it does a front flip over both the oil and the Two-star guy.

We are now directly above the Bike Club Leader.

From each side of the bike a Tentacle Dog leaps towards the Leader, Crushing him and his bike. They also push us a little further so we can fully do the front flip and land.

"Woohoo!" I rev up and leave them behind.

Scylla was panting for breath "Yeah!\*pant\*that's what they get!\*pant\* for getting in our way!"

"Wanna talk about what exactly is up with those dogs?"

"Later \*pant\* I'll take a looong shower when we get to Shizuoka, then if I don't fall asleep right there and then we'll talk"

"(Ugh, why does it feel like I'm gonna get scolded...) Rest then, we have little less than a hour left, I had planning on stopping but now I'll put the pedal to the metal! Hold on tight!"

"Baka..." (Stupid) She said quietly as she hugged me real tight. I didn't thought she will be this strong, shit... that's a Kamui for ya, though I still don't know the real difference between Her's, Matoi's and Satsuki's. Regardless, She's gotta be as strong as Sanageyama at least...

She fell asleep while holding to me and her grasp did not loosen up. The rest of the ride was uneventful, other than a couple of animal sightings and a pit stop in Itō, we did not stopped until we reached one of REVOCS private/secret resorts. Since they, or rather She, sponsors Honnouji, we have full access to places like this.

The reviews from high class pigs I saw online through my phone were goddamn good.

The place had no parking lot, when we arrived i woke Scylla up and got down from the bike so the valet could take it away.

"Welcome Master Kai!" a row of servants said at the same time then the staff chief spoke alone.

"We've been expecting you, We were also told you'd bring company"

Scylla was hidden inside my cape and half asleep. It looks like summoning those dogs Really tire her out.

"She's Scylla, Treat her like one of the Elite Four, but for now we'll take a rest, Lead us to our room" Acting like Satsuki does help a lot on these kind of situations.

"At once!"

A pair of maids asked us to follow them and we walked for a while til we reached an elevator that took us to the highest floor... I wasn't expecting this good of a treatment, whatever, we're here to enjoy we might as well.

The door opened to one of the posh places I've ever seen, even more than our personal rooms back at Honnouji. The entire floor was covered by a carpet, there was a couple of glass doors and a big one that let us out of the penthouse towards a big pool that in itself had another, a little smaller than the main room, building next to it.

"We hope this is of your liking" Both of the maids said so in sync it almost made me lost my cool.

"It is, you may leave now" They bowed and left without any question... Scylla is still half awake below my jacket-cape. Aaaaaaaaaaaaaand she's asleep... I'll carry her to the main bedroom.

Wait! these idiots only gave us only one bed... I'll see if there another on the building by the pool.

Now to take a good swim here as prep for the real thing!

---

Back at Honno city, Inumuta is isolated on a dark room on who know were.

"Iori, did you got the data already?"

"Yes, quite impressive these Undead Fibers, to contort like that... I may even try to pull that off on a goku uniform"

"Don't, I believe it'll be a waste of material"

"If you say so, got anything on their inner workings?"

"Nope, they still look like a black silhouette on the camera..."

"Exciting!"

"Agreed, these things are hiding from us on purpose, there's no other explanation"

"So what we have for now is: The Undead Fibers are some variant of the Life Fibers"

"Yes, though we will archive them as Normal Life Fibers and the Hound as another goku uniform"

"Of course, I also got that message from Lady Satsuki"

"Oh, by the way, Iori. Was it you who put those devices on their uniforms?"

"Nope, but Lady Satsuki said that there's nothing to fear"

"Alright then, let's Unveil these things!"

"Way ahead of you!"

---

"Oh... I see, will do Lady Ragyo..." the chief of staff hung the phone, clearly scared.

"What did Lady Ragyo said?"

The chief was still gasping, but after a bit he did a \*phew\* and spoke.

"Lady Ragyo said that we'll have another guest soon, she did said it was not herself"

The rest of the servants there all eased up when they heard that Ragyo was not coming to their installation. They were not against her, but anyone can tell you that being near that woman is dangerous at the very least.

---

"Sweet! there was another bed on this building! Oh and a bright blue pair swim trunks! I'm starting to like this place!"

I got changed, took a towel from that room and walked towards the pool, keeping my Assault Regalia real close just in case... She'll may scold me but I can defend my argument.

\*Splash\* I plunge into the pool. This thing's far deeper that it looks!

I stabilize on the surface and start swimming to the other end. Damn, this place does have good sights from the whole peninsula! Now I see why REVOCS decided to build this thing here!

It's no use.. I still cannot fully relax...

"You seem to be having fun Kai!" She said from the inside of the penthouse

I stop in at the very center of the pool.

"Yeah! I needed this!"

"And I think that thes shower I need got upgraded to a full on bathtub!"

"Have fun, I had the peoples here prepare one just for you" I know she likes me but I cannot help but treat my friends well.

"Really!- T-thanks..." She blushed a bit again.

"Go or it'll go to waste!" I smiled and she ran into the penthouse.

I: "Hey!"

"Huh? Scylla you said something?!" No answer, either she's playing me a joke or-

I: "Kai was it? Listen to me!"

I jump out of the water, put part of the Assault Regalia on and up my guard.

I: "Jeez I didn't knew you were that easy to scare"

"Who's there?!"

"Is there something wrong? Kai?"

I: "Now she's gonna think you've gone insane, just like Ryuko"

"Who are you?"

I: "Look at your right hand"

My hand had turned far more thin, almost skeletal.

"What the-?"

I: "Relax, do you have any idea how long have I been trying to talk to you?!"

"Wait... Izanami?!" The big red letters appeared.

I: "Ye, let's leave it at that. I'm Izanami one of the Original Undead Fibers as your friends call us"

"Just when I started to relax..."

I: "Hey! It's exactly because of that that I'm able to contact you! If you weren't so on guard all day long I could've given you a couple of good advices by now!"

"... so... what are you..."



I: "I already told you! But if you still have question then I'll tell you and that weird girl once she return"

"Weird girl?" I thought they were related somehow.

I: "We're not. That's something I also want to know, she Obviously was looking for me back when you almost made me cut her head off"

"You can read my mind... that's gonna be annoying"

I: "Then you better get used to it cuz I ain't going nowhere!"

"Huh?!"

I: "I'll explain later but what you have to know right now is that we're together until either of us die, got that?!"

"... I-i guess..."

I: "You're tensing up again! Stop that! Is far easier to stay awake when you're not like that!"

"I got it I got it, damn..."

I: "Don't"

I was about to 'say' something like how aggressive... 'she' (I guess) is but she shot me down before even thinking about it.

"If you don't mind I'm going to drift away while trying to pretend you don't exist, cool?"

I: "Cool as long as you don't go all serious like that girl you like, Satsuki was her name?"

"..."

I: "Nailed it"

"I already want you to piss off..."

I: "Don't you worry, as long as that awful woman doesn't find me I'm okay with doing whatever you want"

"(Mari?!)"

I: "Mari? Who's that? I'm talking about Ragyo Kiryuin,. We've been doing just fine without that woman and we want it to stay that way!"

## Scales (Intermission 2)

How yall doing? hope good with everything going on. But for now to the good stuff.

How you liking the story so far?

Have you read the recently added Prologue "Dragonless"?

Whats something you dint like?

Also, heres the Four star goku uniform that Kai wears, posted it here so you dont have to go all the way back to see it, from now on there will be couple more pics like these.

How'd you like the:

"Yottsu-boshi Goku Seifuku! Totsugeki no Sō" (Four-Star Goku Uniform! Onslaught Regalia)

[/gallery/k7I9k4f](#)

The name change will also happen, I just like onslaught more (they are in fact interchangeable here)

Hope you continue like what I write and to show your support.

Thank you.

-Dragon8641/Charioth

# Monumental

I was 'peacefully' floating in the water, Izanami interrupted me many times.

I: "Listen Kai, your 'normal' state is that of constant alertness, I cannot work while you're like that, so don't"

"Then let me..."

I: "It won't work, I can tell, as a matter of fact I know everything that has been in your mind since you put me on probably better than you"

"Like?"

I: "Weren't you going to ignore me?"

"I'm starting to think there's no point..."

I: "Good! You learn quickly!"

"Now tell me"

I: "Well first of all: you ain't that uninterested on your weird friend there"

"Why you keep calling her weird?"

I: "Well for starters I do not smell any blood on her, are you sure she's even human?"

"I'm sure of it, she is one of the two revenants that attacked Honnouji"

I: "I know. I was there but it still makes no sense to me"

"But I thought you were the same as her uniform"

I: "We work different from the normal Life Fibers you're used to, we all have vastly different skills from one Bundle to another"

"Bundle, that how you call each other?"

I: "More or less, a sentient bundle of Life Fibers or rather *Undead Fibers* is what me and Amenonuhoko are, Bundles"

"I see, Amenonuhoko is the fake lori..." Madman Logic kicked in.

I: "Yep, and my loyal companion since I can remember"

"And what exactly makes you different from the Life Fibers I usually wear?"

I: "The main difference is that: We are completely independent from each other, we do not need to be together or controlled to be Sentient"

"(Then can they...?!)"

I: "Yes, we can take control over creatures and sometimes, preferably, work together. Oh! I forgot to mention, that Senketsu from Ryuko and Junketsu from your girl are like us, Bundles, but they are man made, unlike us who evolved into this form"

"And that means...?"

I: "Senketsu is far too 'young' to know the full extent of its own abilities and Junketsu is practically feral in comparison to either of us"

"Feral... then that makes Junketsu the most dangerous of the two?"

I: "Kinda, Junketsu is the most dangerous to normal humans, but Senketsu still has a LOT of room to grow and with that girl with him they could even surpass us. We all feed from blood but we Undead Fibers aim for **Symbiosis** while Life Fibers just want to eat"

"Mutual benefit? Interesting..." So if both Senketsu and Junketsu drink blood to live, then it's definitely stupid taxing for both of them to wear them, though Satsuki hasn't shown any sign of damage and Matoi even less... shit's getting weirder.

I: "Oh! She's back!"

Scylla walked out to the pool still wearing her Kamui but with a towel trying to dry her hair.

"Feeling better?"

"Yeah, I almost fell asleep in there. The water felt soooooo good "

"That's... good? Anyway, could you call for something to eat? I'm starving"

I: "She doesn't know you can't taste stuff!"

"Okay... Anything comes to mind?"

"Not really, we do not have to pay for anything so have fun trying some stuff and I'll join in"

"Fine... hey, weren't you talking with someone just now?"

"That... is a long story, I'll tell you after we eat"

I: "She's angry brrrother!"

"(Don't call me that!)"

"Then how about I cook?"

"Hmm, not to be mean but something they make will feel better since we are on vacation we might as well try something we haven't before"

Scylla made an angry face but changed back to normal when I finished my reasoning

"That... makes sense... though I will cook one of these days!"

"Feel free to, we are here to have fun"

I: "Oh?! Who's the sharp-toothed girl that just flashed on your mind?!"

"(Bite Me!)"

I: "Can't, even if I wanted to!"

"..."

"I'll go then..."

"The phone is by the big bed"

After Scylla went inside the penthouse I got out of the pool and returned to the building by the side, took a quick shower and put on the my Uniform. This time it felt far heavier than usual.

By the time I returned the food had arrived. Wild Boar Hot Pot. Looks good, has meat so it's good in my book.

"Quite the interesting choice... wait, they made it while I was on the shower?! That was fast!"

"I know! I totally didn't expect them to bring it up this fast. I've never had a big Hot Pot so I wanted to try it out" She smiled.

I: "She wanted to share it with you. Shame you'll have to break her heart. No wait, you've done it already!"

"(Very. Funny.)"

"Something happened?"

I didn't noticed that I put a frown.

"Sorry, is nothing..."

"Then shall we eat?"

"Yeah..."

I: "Don't eat too much now, I like little fat on the blood!"

"(\*sigh\*)"

Scylla put a confused face and we both started eating.

The silence was overwhelmingly uncomfortable.

I: "Y'all gonna talk or what?!"

"Huh?!"

"Who's there?!" Scylla was looking around.

I: "Don't worry weird girl, I'm right here!" My right arm raised itself and slapped a piece of meat I was grabbing in my face.

"Kai..."

"That's... the long story I was talking about..."

I: "Cool, she can totally hear me"

"How are you doing that?"

"I'm not. Remember my blade, The Izanami? Well it turns out to be alive"

"Huh" She was not impressed.



I: "What do you mean 'huh' ?! Here I though you'll be far more impressed"

"Well I've already seen three living set of clothes, so..."

My arm loosen up but I still couldn't fully control it.

"That's enough to break you?"

I: "Nah" my arm straightened up again "Just a lil' disappointed"

"Will you let me finish my dinner?"

I: "She'll get hit with another barrage of questions if you don't stop me, brother"

"DO NOT call me that!" I screamed at my right arm.

I: "Fine, fine I get it"

Scylla stayed surprisingly calm throughout the comedy act.

"So, Kai... Do you mind telling me what's happening?"

"I..."

I: "He may look like he's gone insane, but worry not, I'm kinda like Ryuko's Senketsu"

"But weren't you a blade?"

I: "We Undead Fibers can take many forms, specially myself I just choose to be a blade for the time being"

"You can transform?!"

I: "Why you acting all surprised for, Kai?! You both saw me do it when you fought!"

"Right... and, do you have to be so loud?!" I almost lost my cool.

I: "Remember what I told you? If you're not even a little relaxed then I cannot talk and with you trying to suppress me is taking quite some effort to stay awake!"

"Not even a goddamn day in..."

I: "Regardless! Weird Girl! Tell me what you heard when you got those dogs!"

"Oh that! I almost forgot" She said surprised.

I: "I knew it!"

"Well I only heard it once..."

I: "Speak, girl"

"\*sigh\* I heard a female voice, it sounded familiar but I don't recall where I've heard it before"

"Curious, what'd it told you?"

"I remember being scared when you asked me to attack. I have never been in a fight before, let alone a high speed one, that's when I heard this voice. It Said: 'Dog... Hand... Envy' and before I realized I knew what to do. And a little after when the Two-Stars was the only one left it talked again 'You... Ov'- "

"(Ov)er... Dogs..." I interrupted Scylla's explanation.

"Yes..."

I: "I see... not really, I don't have eyes... Anyway, Inside of you there is also someone like me, presumably that uniform you're wearing is alive just like me"

"But I've never heard it talk like you do..."

I: "Doesn't have to, It probably likes you and/or has nothing to say, that or it actually cannot talk. Not like Kai here who I cannot say I like as host!"

"Hey!-" She was about to say something but Izanami interrupted her.

I: "Oh, he also already knows you like him, so you don't need to to hide it, not that you were doing a good job at that anyway"

"Ah!" her face went completely pale, then slowly turned her eyes from my arm towards my face. Once we made eye contact I nod and she blushes heavily.

I: "Wait how are you-?!"

"Oof" Scylla throws her plate at my face, it breaks and she starts to run towards the side room "Wait! Scylla!"

I: "Get her back here! I'm not done asking questions!"

---

The same facility but a LOT of stories below. A blindingly white car had just left the entrance, driven by the valet. A man in a similarly colored robe was not going into the facility.

"Welcome! Master...?"

"Siegfried. I believe Lady Ragyo should've told you I was coming"

"Indeed Master Siegfried, I hope you don't mind using our suite, the Penthouse was reserved earlier by Lady Satsuki for one of her High Ups"

"Doesn't matter, I'll stay only for a couple of days"

"Do you need help with your luggage sir?"

"No need, take me to the suite, I wanna get some rest"

"At once!"

A pair of maids lead the man towards his room. One of them was called by the rest of the staff and left the one maid to lead the man.

"I hope you find it comfortable Master Siegfried"

The maid was about to leave, but the man dragged her inside the room and locked the door.

---

"Scylla! Open the door!"

I: "Yeah! I'm still not done with the questions!"

"You shut up!"

I: "Make me!"

I hit my right hand on the wall, no added strength to not make the wall crumble.

I: "Ow! Fine!"

"Scylla please let me in!"

"How long?!"

"Huh?"

"For how long have you know?!" She screamed and sounded like she was far away.

"Had my doubts a couple of days before we left, but after our chat with Matoi and Mankanshoku I was certain..."

She stayed silent and after a while I heard her crying a little.

"Listen Scylla... I'm sorry"

I heard her stopped crying and she got up and walked towards the door. But she didn't opened it.

"Do you care?"

"What?"

She hit the door and it bent but it didn't broke.

"Do you care about my feelings?!"

"Yes..."

"Then tell me, why I cannot find happiness even in my second life?!"

"Happiness... I'm not sure..." I looked at the last lights of the day, they reminded me of Satsuki's light.

"Ka-" She was incredibly angry, I could not see her but I could feel it.

"I haven't find it myself" I not trying to save my ass, I'm just being honest.

"..."

"Happiness is not something people just find and are set for life, they must all work hard for it and in their journey they might find bits here and there that guides them in the right path..."

I: "(Smooth)"

"Tell me Scylla, What is happiness for you right now?" I ignored all of Izanami's commentary.

"... being... here with you... I know it sounds stupid. I've only know you for like a month and the first time we met we wanted to kill each other... but I cannot get you out of my head..."

"(Just like I was... )" I remembered the first couple of raids I was part of.

"On top of all that you are already taken by the Empress of Honnouji. How can I compete with someone like her?!" I could hear her voice breaking, she was about to cry again.

"You don't have to"

"huh?"

"You are one person and Satsuki is another, there is absolutely no point in comparing yourself to someone like her!"

"Bu-"

"You are strong, cute and determined on your own way, You'll find your happiness with or without me, I'm sure of it!"

I: "(Seriously though, who's the Sharp toothed girl? She's also cute)"

"(Not. Now!)"

"You... you think I'm cute?"

I: "(What's with her generic reaction?!)"

"(I told you to shut up!) Well yeah, let's use our fight with the bikers earlier: You are cute enough to be considered as partner for one of the strongest dudes in Honnouji... aaand that sounds wrong..." She giggles "Also strong to face the very reason people join Honnouji, the Star System, I swear that one Matoi giving us trouble is enough"

"Hehehe" I could tell she was smiling on the other side of the door.

"Feeling better?"

"Yeah! Thanks Kai..."

"Are you... gonna open the door now?"

"No until you say it again" She is still a girl after all...

"\*sigh\* You're cute"

"Now without the sigh!" She sounded both angry and playful.

"(\*sigh\*) You're cute Scylla"

After she opened the door we returned to the table to finish eating, thankfully we didn't left anything inside the pot when we started our little fight so nothing got burnt, though some cooked meat did get cold and at least one plate broken. Against my face of all places...

We talked about what we're gonna do from the next 6 days. Visiting the private beach here was a must but we also got some video games, movies and a little buffet from part of the staff the day after tomorrow.

We finished eating and Izanami took wasted no time.

I: "So I can do some exposition now?"

We both sighed at the same time.

I: "What's with that reaction? Are you two gonna run away together from all this now?"

"I won't. Even if I could" I answered without hesitation.

"Don't think I got too much to choice from either..." Scylla said a little sad.

I: "Alrighty then, where did we left it off?"

"She had just told us about the voice that told her how to summon the dogs"

I: "Right! Now how come both of you heard the same thing the second time?"

"It wasn't you?"

I: "Nope, the only times I've talked to you was when you got smacked by Ryuko and a couple during your fight, all the others times it wasn't me"

"Strange... guess that's just how I am?"

I: "Well you definitely have blood in you so you're not a Revenant like Weird Girl"

"Stop calling her that!"

"Wait. I have no blood in me? That would explain why I didn't bleed when I stung my finger making the mannequins" She sounded both confused and adorable.

I: "Also no heartbeat. You revenants are a fucking mystery. How can you wear a Kamui while you got no blood in you?"

"You need blood?!" She was shocked.

I: "Yah, we feed from blood and I smell none in you!"

"Chill Iza, if she didn't knew she had no blood in her, you really think that she can explain it?"

I: "Won't hurt to ask... Iza? Really?"

"You deserve it"

I: "Fair is Fair. To the next topic!"

"You don't like slowing down while talking, do ya?"



I: "Nope. Now answer me, What is your relationship with Ragyo Kiryuin"

"Oh! I know her!" Scylla jumped in "She is that pretty woman who is the CEO of the biggest corp in the world! I don't know how her hair works but it sure is gorgeous"

Me and Izanami said nothing, stunned by Scylla's explanation.

"She is... Satsuki's mother"

"SHE'S WHAT?!" Scylla's faces changed from happy to between angry and excited.

I: "Interesting, what else can you tell me about them Kai?"

"Yeah! I wanna know as well!"

"I have very little, you two. I've only met Ragyo once in person and let me tell you, being near her is like walking down a highway with the sun blazing at its highest..."

"What you mean?" She was confused at the analogy.

"Just like it sounds, it's overwhelming! on the bad sense, almost physically taxing"

I: "Oh, finally someone that understands me!"

"You're the last thing I want to hear that from"

I: "Rude"

Scylla watched in silence and with a puzzled look on her face. Maybe she is trying to figure out the connections, obviously I cannot tell her our real intentions, not yet... and don't you fucking say anything Izanami!

I: "(Gotcha!)"

"She is the one sponsoring everything in Honno City, REVOCS is a massive deal and most to all the stuff from we get comes from her"

Scylla was looking at me funny.

"Kai... are you scared of her?"

"..." I felt a big chill all throughout my body.

I: "Whoa there!" It looks like Izanami also felt it.

"Yes, I'm scared of her, she seems off. I cannot explain why but the last thing I want is to be near that woman..."

"Say... what happened to Satsuki's Father?" She tried to change the topic.

"Don't know, I've never met him" He passed everything to Satsuki, Junketsu and the mission of getting rid of Ragyo... And I live to make sure that happens!

I: "Mysterious indeed, now for the final question for the night!"

"..." No reaction from either of us.

I: "C'mon! That's all?! Not even a pity laugh?"

"Hurry Iza, today's been real tiring for us..."

I: "Fine! Hmph! What do you two think of this entity that allegedly revived Scylla, 'Mari' was it?"

"No idea, but she's the one who sent Scylla and presumably also Izanagi to get you, you don't have some kind of mcguffin in you, do you?"

I: "Don't call me that! I have various powers that you're not ready for! And none of them are that special so I don't know what 'Mari' is planning"

"Powers? like what?" Scylla beat me to ask that.

I: "A transformation like Satsuki's or Ryuko's for example, though I have forgotten how to do it..."

"Really Useful..." I said sarcastically. Another one of those will gave us a huge boost in power for anything really.

Scylla was blushing and trying to hide her face.

"What is it?"

"A-are you g-go-gonna wear s-s-so-something like what Ryuko was we-a-ring when we first m-m-met?" She stuttered a lot trying to deliver.

"I've fought naked before and won. Wearing something like that for power... I may even welcome it!"

"I-I could never wear that..." She took her eyes away from me, probably not trying to imagine any of those scenarios.

I: "(You're most likely right partner...)"

"There's a first time for anything... actually... forget that. It doesn't sounds right..."

The sun finally sets in and we each got to a different room. It's been a while since I've slept on a proper bed. While I was looking after Scylla in the 'prison,' I slept on the chair and/or on the desk I got...

---

"Quite the interesting data Tadasuki..." Inumuta said to no one while inside a dark room only lit up by the light of a computer screen.

"So the Undead Fibers are just like Normal Life Fibers but they are self-aware instead of just sentient, We gotta thank him once he gets back" The voice of Iori came from a small device on Inumuta's ear.

"How are you doing finding the intruder?"

"Amenonuhoko is still hidden somewhere, let's wait and see just like Lady Satsuki told us to do"

"Very well, I'll continue to analyze what Kai got us, You inform Lady Satsuki"

"I'll hang up now"

At the top of Honno Tower.

"Lady Satsuki" The screen in Satsuki's room now showed Iori's face.

Satsuki was drinking a cup of tea on her chair, fully prepared to go to sleep for the day.

"Iori"

"We got some data on the Undead Fibers..."

"And you decided it was urgent?" She put down her cup.

"Yes! It concerns Kai's status with the Izanami"

"I see. Speak"

Iori told Satsuki about how Izanami got help from Amenonuhoko to equip itself to a proper host, Kai was the most suitable candidate for it Inumuta deduced, That their union is practically unbreakable yet only brings benefits for both parties and the different forms the Undead Fibers can take, Kamui, Weapon and Mannequin whether they can change between them is still unknown.

"I'll make sure to have a talk with Tadasuki once they return. And how is Shirogane?"

"Her situation as Revenant appears to have not changed but her Kamui, the "BloodHound," has awoken a new power other than

making the clones"

Iori showed her the images they got from Kai and Scylla's fight on the highway.

"Good work you two! Contact Tadasuki tomorrow and ask what he thinks of all this"

"He already told us Lady Satsuki"

"How so?" She was genuinely surprised.

"He wrote it down and showed it to the device on the Four-Stars, that is yet another reason for contacting you directly"

Confused a bit Satsuki told Iori to show it to him. The screen now showed a big picture of a letter.

**Izanami has no idea how the Revenants and Mari works, neither what her purpose is. On the other hand, Scylla, I believe she has become trustworthy and powerful enough of joining us, however she still needs to learn to keep her feelings at bay. One last thing, both Izanami and Amenonuhoko are hiding from Ragyo for unclear reasons.**

"At this point is more than obvious that Scylla Shirogane has feelings for Kai, this may ensure her loyalty. If I may, I propose we make her his secretary, Lady Satsuki"

"I'll think about it... anything else?"

"No for now, both of them have already gone to sleep and we detect no reaction from the Izanami, probably went to 'sleep' as well"

"Make sure you two don't overwork yourselves, you're dismissed!"

"Thank You Lady Satsuki" Iori bowed slightly and the screen turned off.

Satsuki took a deep breath and took a look at her empty cup.

"I don't think they saw your hidden message Kai..."

She looked through the window and blushed just bit. After a bit she went into her room and finally to bed in a really good mood.

A/N: Thanks for reading first of all! but now to a lil bit of an apology :P. this part came out a lil late cuz i got my hands on desings i made for this fic :D. Sadly this site doesn't let me post them. So youll have to go to watpad (same name and everythin) and look for Intermission 3 on there youll find a LOT of designs i made for this. don0t jugde me i want my stuff to be seen :3 Thank again for readin.

## Chasing the Sun

We spent the second day of our vacations playing videogames all day "All-Stars: IF" a fighting game whose roster of characters has only ONE dude! It's really good though. Scylla didn't let me go anywhere till she beat me. She managed to get a clean kill off me once but got angry at me because she thought I let her win.

She was mad at me the entire day. I took a long swim and her focused glare almost pierced my lungs. She calmed down after I told her I wanted to see her cooking, Izanami said nothing the entire day, it was a good day...

Third Day, there was a buffet for the guests that the staff made, we went only for a bit though, the other visitors were rather rude to Scylla and all of them were scared of my Four-Stars.

Once back in the penthouse it was starting to get dark and I decided to put a movie I wanted to watch but I haven't got the time to.

"DUEL! 52" The screen showed and sounded loudly.

I talked to Scylla earlier about how these are the people Satsuki and I call pigs and that there is no reason to give a flying fuck about them... not with those exact words though. To which she then curled up on the bed for a bit. That's when I put the movie in the living room just outside, to see if it lured her out.

The door of the main room slowly swung open.

"(Jackpot!)"

"Kai... What are you watching?"

"Oh, one of my favorite series of movies. DUEL!"

"Duel..." she was really discouraged

"Wanna watch it with me? I've been wanting to see this one for a while but haven't had the chance"

"I-"

I: "AW HELL YEAH!"

"Dammit..."

"Dammit..."

I: "What now?!" Izanami's voice sounded like if it had just woken up but it was still very loud.

"Just when I thought I had him for myself..."

I: "But you did had him! Yesterday's night was your time to make a move! Butcha didn't!" Her voice was far louder now, like being fully awake. Scylla blushed at Izanami's comment.

"You were awake?!"

I: "Nah, I looked into Kai's memories"

"Iza, could you like... Not"

I: "I'll try. So, what are we doing today?"

"We were going to watch a movie..."

"We Still are, just do us a favor and stay quiet throughout the whole thing will you?" I lectured Izanami.

I: "No promises" My arm returned to normal and Izanami went quiet.

"..."

"So anyway, let's start it" I told Scylla and silently she sat on the other side of the couch.



"I've never seen the DUEL! movies, are they good?"

"You What?!"

"Yeah, I have heard of them. There are a lot of them but I've never seen any of them..."

"Well I don't judge you... seeing the big number by its side can be disheartening when people want to catch up, But that's the good thing about DUEL! They are all different stories between them! So you don't need to watch them in any order!"

"Oh!" She looked surprised and amused at my reaction.

"There is this card game that I used to play for a bit... before and bit after I Joined Honnouji, Sanageyama joined me on the fun at the time. Well, what the DUEL! movies all share is that they use this card game as a way to fight, modifying the rules here and there, to tell a different story every time!"

"Sounds... Complicated..." She looked down, she doesn't think she'll enjoy it as much.

"Don't worry, all you have to know is that the strongest creatures wins and sometimes they do stuff. You don't have to learn the game to enjoy the movies. In fact, some say that you may enjoy them more if you don't know the game..."

"Why's that?" Her expression changed to a more cheerful and curious one.

"You realize mistakes made entirely for plot reasons, but since I stopped playing it I've been enjoying the movies a lot more! So I can tell you that it's true" I smiled at her unconsciously and she looked away a little red "Some of them can be very dark though, like 13 and 26"

She was now really interested.

"You like that theme?"

"Yes! My favorite movie of all time is 'The Demon of Desire'! "

"That's one Twisted Love story I'll tell you that much. Regardless, I think you're gonna like this one! From what the trailer showed it was about a maiden that was betrayed, and the spirit of Light and the one of Dark help her, but no to achieve revenge and that's where the trailer ends"

"Whoa! I wanna see that!"

I: "(Got her where you want her! Partner!)"

"(Don't)"

"What's your favorite movie Kai?"

"Oh easy. DUEL! 48"

"You like these ones that much uh?"

"Kinda, that one I love because is both really scary and filled with many colors"

"How does that work?" She tilted her head a little.

"You see the main cast on that one was a group of four girls that want to become professionals. But in the world they were, doing so was practically. Actually no, it was Literally becoming a criminal"

"Whoa! And what they did?"

"Three of them managed to become pros but one of them left since it greatly damaged her family"

"Aw. that's sad... can we watch that one after this one?"

"Yeah, I don't mind"

"Yay! I'll call for some snacks!" She returned to the main room to call the room service.

I: "(You're not gonna stop her?)"

"(Nah, I don't like the texture of those things but I don't mind it for today)"

I: "(BY GOD, She's winning you over!)"

"(As if, She's a strong asset for me and I want her on our side)"

I: "(Where did the you that could take a joke went?)"

"(It's just so we're clear)"

I: "(Whatever you say... aaaaand I'm bored, Wake me up if something good happens!)"

(Before you go. I have a couple of questions)

I: "(Shoot then, It's not like we can hide anything from each other anyway)"

(When I first wielded you, you tried to make me kill fake Iori, or rather Amenonuhoko, why?)

I: "(I wanted to see if you were truly a suitable host, I tried to take control over you)"

"(You make it sound like it was nothing...)"

I "(It's not something I want to remember. You managed to turn the tables then... and that to me is kind of embarrassing... )"

"Huh..."

I: "(Anythin' else?)"

"(That red skeleton I saw in my dreams and visions...)"

I: "(Yep, that's me)"

(How?)

I: "(If I were to take human form, not that I can anymore, that's how I would look like. It's kinda like my original form if it makes you feel better)"

"(Interesting, looks cool to me. Okay, one last thing: You know what up with that weird lock I saw with you?)"

I: "(Thanks I guess. And nope, don't know. Still trying to figure it out myself, looks fun!)"

"(It's fun all you think about?!)"

I: "(That's Life and Sometimes Death Partner! Later!)"

"\*sigh\*" Izanami's voice disappeared and when I noticed there was a very angry Scylla inches away from my face.

"KAI!"

"AH!" I jumped back to reality.

"You okay? You weren't responding..."

"Yeah I'm okay, just talking a bit with Izanami..."

"You Ignored me completely, \*hmp\*" She looks mad...

"Sorry..."

She got closer and sat by my side, still with her annoyed face. I managed to notice that when she sat, her expression changed to a smug grin, like one of Nonon's for a second before changing back.

"(She is using me 'mistreating' her as excuse, clever girl)"

I said nothing and play the movie.

As the Movie continues she gets ever closer until she is literally laying on me.

I heard SomeONE cheering in the back of my mind but decide to ignore it.

The Movie is about three fourths through and the MC finally uses the power of darkness against the bad guy.

***" I KNEW IT! You WERE being manipulated by the malicious Spirit of Darkness, come back Sister, we can still save you"***

***" No Brother! This isn't about you, me or our people anymore. This is about the world, our time has come to an end and delaying it will only hurt everyone!"***

***" NONSENSE, OUR GODDESS OF LIGHT HAS GIVEN ME A VISION, ONE WHERE DARKNESS WILL FALL TO OUR MIGHT, IF YOU DO NOT SEE IT SISTER THEN PERISH AGAIN!"***

***" She is the one that send me to stop you, brother..."***

*The Brother attacks with everything he got. And just as he is about to hit the MC, he is sent back flying, Dark flames with a blazing red aura surrounds MC to form a big jacket of fire.*

*The face on the brother is pure fear, the power of Darkness should kill any and all beings of light like himself and his sister.*

***" I'M NOT HERE TO AVENGE MYSELF FOR WHAT YOU DID BROTHER! I'M HERE TO END WHAT YOU FOOLISHLY STARTED!"***

*As the jacket of flames finishes forming a compass of yellow light appears at the back of MC, that is what the Goddess of light does to*

*her followers when she grants them power directly.*

*With the flick of a wrist, all of the Brother's creatures are destroyed and there is only one of MC's on the battlefield.*

**" Farewell. King of Lies"**

*MC says calmly and orders her creature the ' **Chaos Dancer** ' to attack and finish the Brother, he does nothing while watches in awe.*

**" Chaos Dancer, End him! Edge of Dawn! "**

*As the dancer attacks with a single slash she cut in half not only her opponent but the entire battlefield as well.*

Scylla gets really excited when the creature that looks like a Dark Samurai Idol Girl Slashes the brother in half. Ending the match and thus the life of the brother.

"Is it a little early to end the Bad Guy? I mean we still have like another half an hour of movie" I failed to keep these thoughts to myself.

"Now that you mention it..."

*MC walked away, no end speech, no glorious pose or anything, just walks away. A slow and sad music starts playing about an unavoidable end.*

*MC made friends of Light and of Dark but after the bad guy was defeated it was the first time all of them were in the same place at the same time.*

*The Dark Friends approach her slowly, she having friends of both sides means that the message she gave them was true: " **The Time Of Light Is Over, But Their King Refuses To See It, Hurting Their Goddess And Killing Our Kind For Being 'Evil.'** Join Me To End This Madness And Start The Time Of Dark As It Was Meant To Be!"*

*The Ones of Light were not too welcoming though, they were scared of those of the Dark, for all they knew was the Evil their King told them they did. So they stayed wary of the ones from the Dark.*

*MC was originally one of the Light Beings, but after her brother Kill her, she returned back to life as a Envoy of Both the End of Light and the Beginning of the Dark. She tried to convince those she called her kin to stop following their mad King and end the suffering of their dying Goddess.*

*MC is now tired, she sadly killed many of both sides since they did not understand what was happening. Now with her brother dead, it was time. Time for the End of the Light. MC collapsed on the ground in the middle of both groups of friends.*

*" **Milady!**" One of the elders from the light ran towards her, startling the Ones from the Dark.*

*" **I'm okay Chamberlain, It's all done...**"*

*" **Congratulations Milady, You deserve a rest**"*

*" **We all do**" With a smile, she looked at the Ones from the Light who sat on the floor and with their eyes closed that waited like statues, but before that. All of them said how honored they were of fighting alongside her till the literal end. " **The pleasure was mine...**"*

*They all closed their eyes and one by one the transformed into actual statues, including the one MC loved long before and after she died.*

*MC looked at the ones of Dark now.*

*" **Do not make the same mistakes we did... The God of Dark loves you all, remember that when the end comes again...**"*

**" WE WILL! LADY OF TWILIGHT!"** Everyone from the Dark was crying.

*She smiled and now it was her turn to become a statue, but instead, she became a beam of both light and darkness that disappeared into the skies.*

Credits start to roll following the beams.

I didn't noticed it until now but Scylla was crying.

"You liked it?"

She doesn't answer and cries a bit more.

"Scylla?"

I think that the fact that MC was some kind of revenant as well hit a bit too close to Scylla's home. Maybe that's why she is sad?

"Kai..." She looked at me, I have seen that expression before. Defeat. But why?

Without saying anything else she looked at me directly in the eyes and started to get closer and closer until she was less than an inch away from my face.

She kissed me on the lips and I don't stop her. I've felt this before... When Satsuki's Mannequin... Scylla is imitating it... Curious.

The seconds felt like hours.

\*Knock Knock\*

She stops and backs away. Her face is absolute happiness but it becomes Extremely red just moments later, she escapes to the main room and locks the door.

Better left her alone a bit, I'm gonna check on who is on the door.



"I'm going!" I yell at the ones waiting.

"Special Deliver for the Vice-President"

"(Idiots! They call me Master Kai here. Some nobodies from Honnouji tracked us all the way here!)"

I notice a shadow jump from the outside of the penthouse and hides behind something. The ones with that ability were... a yes, the Manga Club.

I see that the one that is trying to sneak behind me is going for Scylla. I guess they don't know she is tougher than me. And how she is right now, she will annihilate whoever goes into that room.

I better apologize to the staff later if these assholes damaged anything.

I pretend no to notice the one who snuck in and open the front door just a little after he goes inside the room with Scylla.

"Yes?" I say as I open the door and just as they tried to jump on me. Their faces changed to pure fear.

I look back and see one of Scylla's Dogs grabbing then ninja wannabe and leader of the Manga club. He's Already out cold in the maw of the Tentacle-Dog thingy.

"Yeah, so how are we doing this?" I ask the terrified one stars. "**The Easy Way or My Way ?**"

Scylla throws the leader at them, they grab him and run away.

After that the dog goes back inside and closes the door.

"Scylla, I'm going to make sure they don't mess something on their way back to Honno City! Ok?!"

"ISOKYOUUCANGOBYE!" She is still really embarrassed.

She is like a little girl... a little girl with the power to destroy Two-Star students... If Ryuko Matoi didn't exist she and the other Revenants would be our strongest enemies for sure...

---

### ***Top of Honno Tower.***

Satsuki was relaxing on her chair alone with a cup of tea, staring at Junketsu who twisted and turned inside its glass frame.

She was specially focused on the way its eyes looked, bloodshot and hungry, they eyed her down like prey. They reminded her of the man that, once a little Lizard, was now a Fierce Dragon Ruling just a few steps below her throne.

Once their eyes met, Junketsu went silent still.

"Kai Tadasuki, The Dragon Hoarder of Hearts..." She recalled the various affairs Kai had on their relatively short time since he joined her.

It made her, Jealous. She was confused why he stopped having them the moment she told him to stop. At first she thought it was him just being Loyal but by the stories Nonon told her, Kai should've put far more resistance than that.

Satsuki is well aware of Kai's feelings for her, she always has been. He doesn't hide them when they are alone. Neither does she.

Satsuki was not interested in Kai back when they first met. But, as time passed, Kai's presence on her mind increased little by little.

What first got her attention was the fact that Kai was not imitating her, he was following her close behind, learning from her and making it his own strength. He grew undeniably quickly, yet he was still the same, he still was madly in love with her.

Neither Kai's Duty to Honnouji or his Desire for Strength tainted his love for her, in fact, it grew with them.

That's why she didn't understand, why did Kai had all those affairs if he loved her that much.

The answer to that was something she wondered only when completely alone to herself. Junketsu did not count as a person in her eyes.

While Scylla Shirogane has feelings towards him, there's little to not a chance of her getting him, he did gave his word as not to have any more relationships. She trusted him and knew that Scylla's feeling were ephemeral, that she will get over him soon... or will she?

Her expression changed, she was angry but calmed herself just seconds later when the memory of Kai's oath entered her mind.

### ***A couple of months after Kai Joined them for the First Time***

They were both alone in a classroom, the elite four were sent to take care of this installation themselves and they were waiting for them.

Kai stood in front of her. She took this opportunity and told Kai about their true mission, he had proven both his strength and trust these past month, even getting the title of Dragon from herself just some raids ago.

Kai was speechless at the atrocities Ragyo did, but his face was full of determination now, the one of who she called the Dragon was proving himself worthy once again.

Kai's dark eyes were looking directly at Satsuki's Deep Blue eyes...

**" I Will Shield you from the Darkness When the Walls around us Quake, I Will Hold Back all the Monsters Until my Bones Begin to Break and I Will Never Leave your Side even when the World Forgets my Name"**

His worlds pierced her heart. "Why?" She asked herself. She knew the answer but decided not to acknowledge it then.

Kai was bowing to protect not only the cause, her ideals and herself. But also to avenge the five year old girl that left the world the moment she decided to built a fortress for the world.

He wanted to give Satsuki a well deserved rest over anything else.

He will patiently wait for his chance and, if needed, give his life for it.

She was his sun: The one who filled his life with light, power, warmth. But also unreachable and dangerous for if he pursues it, he might destroy himself.

There was no movement from any side for a couple of seconds, then the elite four kicked the door open, Sanageyama launched the leader of the little rebellion of this school across the room. Both of them, the Lioness and the Dragon, remained unfazed by the suddenness of all this. It's time to work.

### ***Back in the present***

She smiled at the warmth that Kai's oath gave her that day, took a sip of tea, pulled a diary out of her robe and wrote something on it with the smile still on her face.

She finally closed it, hid it again and was back to her usual expression.

---

I was walking down towards the lobby to ask what did the One-Stars did to get into the resort when Izanami started to talk.

I: "Hey Kai, what do you think of Scylla?"

"You know already" A One star jumped from inside the elevator, I punch him and goes flying out a window I opened just a bit ago.

I: "As a woman I mean"

"She's just a girl that doesn't know what her future holds"

I: "Interesting, you don't seem to dislike her for that"

"A young woman that tries to make the most of her second life, no one can and I won't let anyone hate her for that"

The Elevator doors open on the lobby floor and three of the One-stars jump yet again at me. They hit me and do nothing. I give them a glare and they run away through the main door.

"Master Kai!" The chief of staff moved quickly towards me "I apologize for the inconvenience" he bows deeply.

"Think nothing of it, they are just ants to me, more importantly, did they damaged anything?"

"Thanks for your concern Master Kai. Fortunately, they did not damaged the resort"

"No wounded either?"

"That... is a different matter... you see, one of our Maids has gone missing"

"Missing? Where?" I couldn't have been these guys, they aren't that smart.

"We don't really know, she was last seen escorting a guest two days ago, then she returned later to the staff room that night and the day after she was gone"

"I'll try to look into this before we leave"

"Thank you very much! Is there something we could do to repay you?"

What could be good...? Got It!

"I want the private beach for me and my companion tomorrow, all for ourselves"

"You have picked the perfect time for a visit there Master Kai! Tomorrow most of our guests will be leaving! There is no problem with leaving the private beach to you two!"

I: "(That doesn't sounds suspicious at all...)"

"(For once we agree...)"

I: "(You're not gonna give a fuck about it are you?)"

"(Nope, I just recently managed to get a good feeling out of these vacations and no asshole is gonna ruin that for me, not even you!)"

I: "(Hey!)"

"Master Kai?" Apparently once again I spaced out when talking to Izanami and the chief tried to talk to me.

"That's most wonderful, thank you once again for your hard work" I said just to end the conversation and return to the penthouse.

I left soon after, wondering where this missing maid went.

Back at the penthouse, the pool was full with One-star bodies, scylla was still locked up. I assume they tried to capture her but... well...

I think I'll wait a little before telling her the good news.

But first I have to deal with these pigs...

---

***A couple of days after Tadasuki fought Scylla for the First Time.  
(Around a month ago)***

## ***Sewing Club***

They were both extremely focused on their respective screens when Iori broke the silence.

"Inumuta, tell me something"

"Hmm? What is it?"

"Why do you think was it really that Lady Satsuki sent Kai down here?"

"Isn't that obvious?"

"I want to see if our answers match..." They started another little debate, it's their way of unveiling secrets.

"Well for starters, Tadasuki was caught up in a weird situation from the beginning. Getting attacked by Matoi while untransformed means she caught him off guard, really unusual"

"Then there's fact that he stayed and clashed with her, rarely changing his weapon. He was fighting to maintain his image, not to beat Matoi. I also think there was no meaning in defeating her then"

"I see, after that there are the clones, It looks like Scylla was the one behind those nightmares, but we need confirmation..."

They both swallow saliva.

"Now for his tactics... he was as decisive as ever..."

"Indeed... no buts... no hesitation and straight for the kill..."

Trying to avoid the topic they jumped straight to the next one.

"And the Izanami..."

"A man wielding a weapon that should not exist, against an enemy that should not be alive with the tactics only a raging storm would consider fair..." Inumuta voiced their conclusion to the fight.

"He was put in Quarantine..." Iori deciphered the real reason why Kai was 'put on a leash' and locked up down below.

"Great minds think alike, I'm unaware of what did Lady Satsuki told him but I do think that Tadasuki also know this"

"That idiot! not even calling for reinforcements!" Iori knew why he didn't, he and Lady Satsuki tend to think the same things. If they went to help him there was a high chance of Kai attacking them in the heat of the moment.

They both let out a big sigh and returned to their screens.



# Dragonslayer

## *Night of the Third Day of Vacations*

I had to deal with the members of the Manga club that were knocked out and piled up in the pool by Scylla. She did not come out of that room for the rest of the day.

I left with the ones who were still awake and made them carry their clubmates back to Honno City, but before that I left a note under the door for Scylla so she'd know I'll be out again for a couple more minutes.

On my way down to the lobby, I could see many of the other guests in a big hurry to leave. Whatever their business is I do not care. But if they get in the way, they are just another enemy to me...

Now down at the lobby, the other guests were leaving by dozens. Maybe I'll get interested and ask the chief here about the mass migration.

But for now.

"Hey! All of you! Hurry up! I don't have all day for you shit!"

"Yessir!" The couple of them said scared and picked up the pace.

"Don't you think you're being too harsh with them?" A young man dressed in all black, wearing a face mask and a pair of sunglasses spoke to me.

"None of your business" I told him without even looking directly at him.

"Are all of Honnouji upper echelon like this?" The man spoke with the receptionist.

"I cannot tell, he's the only one I've ever met, sir. Other than Lady Satsuki herself" The receptionist answered.

"What can you tell me about her?"

"Enough! I just told you that what Honnouji does is none of your business! Now get moving!" The receptionists bowed and left quickly and, after an even quicker exchange of glares, so did the man.

Finally I'm done sending off those One-stars back to Honno city and I'm on my way to get a good shower.

I get into my room and start undressing..

\*creak\*

This is one time a door had made a noise like that since we arrived.

I turn around to see a slim and small silhouette. Scylla, her silver eyes are now crimson red. What's the meaning of-

Before I could say a thing a smell reached my nose. It was, extremely, enchanting.

Crap...

I didn't notice at first but I started to drool and breathe heavily, like a wild beast in heat.

The last thing I remember was Scylla's devilish smile.

From there, it's all darkness.

---

Iori is alone at the **Sewing club** , working himself to death as usual.

Steps on the steel floors get louder and louder. Iori did noticed them even as focused as he was, only one *person* could make it to where he was now without raising the alarm.

Inumuta was down somewhere in Honno City, Satsuki did not leave the tower, Kai is in Izu and everyone else has no reason to go to him.

The metal door slides open to reveal a familiar face, his own face.

"So it was you..."

"You expected anyone else?" The imitator said.

"What I really meant was: What do you seek here?" Iori got up from his chair and held the neck of his uniform, ready to transform. While it was not meant for combat, it still gave a massive boost in power if needed.

"You can relax, there is one thing I want and I'm more than sure you'd want to join in after you hear me..."

"Then speak!" With his other hand, Iori pulled a gun, a replica of the one the Mohawk dude used to attack Matoi some weeks ago.

"I know you're deeply interested in Kai's *Condition* "

Iori lowered the gun.

"Go on"

---

The light from the sun rising managed to get through the one gap in the curtains and hit me dead in the eyes, forcing me to wake up.

With my vision slightly blurred (and partially blinded by the goddamn sun), I finally opened my eyes to the new day.

When I woke up I was only wearing my underwear and full of bite marks, but not only human ones, there were also ones that looked like dog ones.

I tried to move out of the bed, but I couldn't. I took the blanket off to see what had me shackled to the bed...

A sleeping Scylla hugged me tightly, still wearing BloodHound but had no shoes on.

It appears I moved just enough to wake her up.

"Kai..." Her face was all smiles and she holds me even tighter, almost taking the air out of my lungs with that one. But her eyes were their normal silver.

"Hey, Scylla..."

"What are you doing in my bed?" She is still half asleep, her voice was weak.

"I think that's my line..."

I: "(Good morn- OH SHIT WHAT DID I MISS?!)"

"(I also want to know...)"

---

Slowly, Scylla woke up and realized what she was seeing: A man a head taller than her full of bite marks in *many* places.

"(What happened?)"

She asked herself that way too early, for a moment later the realization hit her.

"(Di-Did we just...?)"

She let go of Kai and got all red. But she did not run away.

"Finally fully awake?" Kai smiled at her and that got her face even more red.

"I-I-I guess!"

Kai got up. Scylla noticed that he was almost completely naked as he got up and she started to think it was all a dream. A beautiful one.

"This is the first time I've had this kind of amnesia..."

Scylla just did some noises and started to look around her own body, to see if she was also naked. She was still wearing her Kamui... but there was something that she was missing: her panties.

She got up from the bed and started walking away while holding her skirt down so it doesn't show anything.

"(Wait... Amnesia?) Kai... do you... remember anything?" Scylla didn't remember anything after a powerful smell got her in trance.

"No, not really... the last thing I remember is you walking in on me changing and... smelling... impossibly... tasty..." Kai licked his lips unconsciously.

"\*yip\*" letting out the noise a small animal would yell when it saw a predator, Scylla sped up on her retreat towards the door.

"Go Scylla, we'll talk once we've had breakfast and some time to think... ok?"

"O-o-o-o-ooo-ooo OK!" With that panicked yell Scylla ran full speed out of Kai's room.

---

"Izanami"

I: "Yah?"

"Dig into my memories, see if you can find anything..."

I: "I cannot make you relive them if that's what you're wonderin!"

"That would've been a nice bonus... but what I really want is to find out is what that smell was"

I: "On it partner. Hehe, I also wanna know what she did to get you like this"

I could feel a smug smile on Izanami's nonexistent face and I REALLY wanted to punch it.

I took a quick shower since I couldn't take one last night, put on My Uniform and walked out to the dining room. The only sounds I could hear were those of birds and the wind.

As expected, Scylla locked herself up in the main room. Better tell her to get some room service.

As I turned to knock on the door, the door opened.

"Kai?!" Scylla jumps in surprise.

"Hey, going somewhere?"

"I was about to go to tell you that I called for something to eat..."

"Good Girl"

"Don't call me that..." She looked away obviously red, but she was being serious about what she said.

"So? What'd you got for us?"

"I don't really know... I asked for it and then they hung up immediately saying 'On it!' "

"Interesting... I think we can trust them, everything they have made for us has been really good so far and we are also some of the few guests that stayed here so they might've been bored..."

"Wanna do something while we wait?"

"They're probably gonna get up here really quick so let's start preparing to go to the beach"

"THAT'S RIGHT!" She was REALLY excited.

"You forgot? It IS the main event of today" I fake being disappointed.

"No-not at all! Is... It's just..." Her expression changed to sadness.

"I get it, I won't pressure you to talk about it when we still haven't eaten" She still stunned about the whole 'Sleep Together' thing.

With an exchange of smiles she turns away from me. She is about to say something but the doorbell sounds.

"Masters Kai and Scylla, Your breakfast is ready"

"I'm going!" Scylla beat me to it. She's gotten more assertive, interesting.

I: "(You said it)"

"(About damn time, got anything?)"

I: "(Do you ever like, chill? I'll tell you both after you done eatin, later!)"

"(What an ass...)"

"Kai! Are you not gonna eat?!"

Scylla yelled at me for spacing out again while talking to Izanami.

"I'm going! No need to yell"

The chef was the one putting the table, Scylla helped, I guess she isn't quite used to this posh stuff... good.

But I'm curious though, why the chef himself is up here serving us directly?

The table was full of food, eggs, pancakes, some very fancy toast and some salad among other stuff. The chef poured us each a glass of juice and stood by the side of the cart with a rice cooker in case any seconds were asked.

The breakfast was uneventful for the first half. Scylla was non-stop saying how good everything tastes and when she asked me how it is I answered that it is indeed tasty.

When she asks for a third serving of rice I decide to speak with the chef.

"It is all delicious chef, but I must ask, why is it that you are visiting us in person?"

"Is that rare?"

"Usually a maid will be sent, not the Head Chef itself"

When Scylla spoke he rolled his eyes and laughed a bit inside, I could tell he was a little disappointed with Scylla's 'Lack of Class' but he bears with it since he knows she is being honest.

"Master Kai, with the resort this empty I personally get really bored when there is no work. You see, I like to cook, actually that is an understatement, I LOVE to cook, and when I heard that it was the Vice-president of Honnouji was asking for something to eat I decided to step my game up"

I could feel the passion on the man's voice, a good man, shame he serves all those *other* guests that don't know how to appreciate this kind of thing.

"Amazing! I have no doubt that you're going to make it far! That is only if you do want to though" I said as I took another bite of the egg.



"You're way too kind Master Kai" The chef bowed "I do enjoy my place here and I do not plan on going anywhere anytime soon..."

During the conversation, Scylla's eyes moved to see the one of us who was talking and finally landing back to me.

After some more silence, we finished eating, gave our thanks to the chef and Scylla helped him get everything on the cart.

"Hey! You could've helped us Kai!" Scylla got mad at me the second the chef was outside.

"That man clearly enjoys his job and I don't want to take away from it" A little excuse I'm sure she won't buy.

"I-I guess..."

"(Thought you better than that girl...)"

"In any case, I also asked for a couple of stuff to take to the beach!" She returned to being excited.

"Excellent! Just a couple more things and we'll be good to go!"

While getting everything sorted, I got a call from Iori and I answered as I walked to my room to get the last things.

"What's up Shiro?"

"KAI! \*sigh\* Thank God you're okay" He was worried sick.

"What do you mean? You think I'm that weak now or what?"

"I'm going to be blunt, the devices planted on your uniforms don't work anymore"

"What?! How?"

"Last Night I looked away from them for just a second and they stopped working, did you notice any damage on them?"

"None at all. The Manga club attacked us but they did no damage to anything... other than my sleep schedule"

"You son of-" He cut himself short but I sensed that he almost laughed "For now on we'll communicate like this. Since I don't think you'll be able to repair them. No offense"

"None taken"

"So what happened last night?" While we were talking I heard the tapping of a Keyboard, but now it stopped.

"You're not going to believe me..."

"Bet"

"Apparently, Scylla and I slept together"

"WHOA! REALLY?! Lady Satsuki is going to kick your ass when she finds out!" It was so loud I'm sure Scylla heard from the other building.

"I said *apparently*, didn't I? The truth is: neither of us knows what really happened..." I whispered to him just to not make Scylla uncomfortable about it, if by any chance she's close.

"Oh! she's near, sorry for that. And conveniently the devices shut off around the time you went to sleep... you sure this isn't one elaborated plot of your?"

"Now I'm offended! For real though, I'm waiting for Izanami to see if it can dig out something useful"

"Very well, be sure to contact me first thing after Izanami gets back to you. Until then I won't tell anything to Lady Satsuki"

"You're a real one Shiro"

"It'll be a shame if the strongest guinea pig just banished from my lab"

"You asshole!"

We both laughed.

"One last thing before I go. Last night I got a visitor" He went back to being all serious.

"That's why you let the devices fry?"

"It was a *Familiar Face* so there was nothing I could really do about it"

"I see..." He met Amenonuhoko, interesting. "Did something else happen?"

"Nothing to discuss over the phone, so I'll be going now"

"See you in a couple days" We both hung up and as if waiting for the call to end, Scylla walked in.

"Kai. All ready?"

"Yeah, just got a call from home, but it's nothing to worry about"

"Hmm" She started to get mad...

"It was lori..." Man... women are scary, but I already knew that...

She immediately lightened up and smiled.

"So? ready to go?"

"Yes, but one thing before we step out. You want to take the *Elevator Express* with me?" I tell her while pointing to the helipad of the

penthouse which extends out of the resort.

She was unbelievably happy.

"Just make sure nothing is going to fall off when we jump"

"All Ready!"

"Then Let's Go!"

After securing my backpack and adjusting my gauntlets we both started to run towards the back of the penthouse and did a little jump to get on top of the helipad.

One last killer sprint and a big jump towards the direction of the beach. I did a Backflip, Scylla just jumped normally.

Halfway to our destination we got on tree height and it was time for both of us to slow down the fall.

She used both of her Dogs to grab the treetops and slow herself down. I transformed my left hand and summoned my shield to start bouncing off the trees.

We were really close to the shore and my speed was a little too much while Scylla had already landed and was running just to get rid of the speed she still had.

I was not going to stop on time, I was going to land somewhere in the water. Naturally I had the backup plan of using the Tail to curve away from the water. But I had a feeling that I was going to be Okay.

"(Water... Dogs... Girl...)"

I just shot out of the treeline and was now flying over sand when I felt a row of teeth grab me and launch me towards the side, I did a little front flip and landed on my two feet safely just some meters away.

"Thanks Scylla!" I cleaned my shield from the sand and twigs and de-transformed my left hand.

"It was all **Rex** " She said while petting the dog on her left sleeve. The dog was visibly happy and returned to being an actual sleeve moments later.

"OH! You gave them names?"

"Yes! That one is **Rex** and **Levia** is the other" She summoned the other dog.

"That's cute, how did you come up with their names?"

"They are names from 'Demon Of Desire,' Rex is the Dog from the antagonist and Levia is one of the Demons that they find in the Lava Lake" She smiled and I could tell she was really proud of her name choices.

"It's been a while since I last saw that movie... (Also... where is Izanami?)"

"Do you want to watch it when we get back?"

"Sounds like a plan to me! But for now let's have fun!"

"Oh! There's some kind of shop there!" She said while pointing at a warehouse that had a front like a palm shack.

We walked there, Me still wearing my Four-Stars and Scylla with her Bloodhound. Upon arriving we see nobody, not even employees. Just a note that says that we can use anything in here.

"Well... don't mind me! Hehehe" I could not contain that devilish laugh as I grabbed one of the Jetski that was already mounted on a trailer and brought it close to the water.

Before going on it I took off my uniform and put on one of the mannequins they had on the shop, except my suit jacket that I kept

on While Scylla was setting up the folded chairs under one of many umbrellas.

"You're not going in?" I asked her to join me as I got on the JetSki.

"That stunt got me a little tired, I'll join you in a bit..."

So she gets tired now... could it be that her *condition* as a revenant is improving?

I: "(That seems to be the case, I'm not sure why though...)" Izanami 'appeared' out of nowhere.

"(Finally you're back! Got anything?)"

I: "(You gonna kill me for this, but I've got no idea what you're talking about)"

"(You're damn right...)" I was incredibly angry and it showed in my face. Scylla was somewhat sad, probably she thinks I'm mad at her for not joining me.

Something surprised her, I'm not sure what but her expression definitely changed dramatically.

I turn on the ski and rev up.

The machine blasts off almost leaving me behind. I ended up quite some distance away from the shore and I could see Scylla laughing.

Her pale skin almost seemed to have some color to it, better check once I'm back in land...

She waved for me to look at her directly, not that there was anyone else around.

Relatively slowly, Bloodhound started to disintegrate, but after watching a bit more it was clear to me that it was transforming, into a... Bikini?!

The Eyes/Ribbon thingy was now the top part and bottom part still had a short bit of the skirt, the (not so) strange part was the sleeves: they stayed almost the same, probably to keep the dogs "on guard" at all times.

That's a nice trick... I'm going to ask if all Kamui can do that...

I: "You get bold sometimes Y'know?"

"Not that you can stop me..."

I: "And won't. If anything I'll encourage you so I don't have to slumber again"

"Is it that bad?" I waved at Scylla then I gave her a thumbs up, for her reaction I'm sure that was exactly that was what she wanted.

I: "What was it you wanted me to look into?" Apparently Izanami doesn't want to talk about it. I slowly speed up the ski.

"Scylla and I slept together last night, however neither of us seems to recall what exactly happened..."

I: "AND I MISSED IT?!"

"Listen to me dammit! The last thing I remember was undressing to get into the shower, after that she got into my room and it's all black from there"

I: "HOLY SHIT!"

"Ugh, What now?"

I: "I'm looking in your brain and where did all the damage she did to you went? I don't feel any of the marks still on you"

"Now that you mention it..."

I: "Bullshit if you didn't realize that until now!"

"You can tell if I'm lying, can't you?"

I: "Naturally, still that's weird... even for you"

"Thanks for the compliment...?"

Apparently, the conversation was over so I accelerated the ski and now *Really* started to do some stunts. A couple flips, a wave tall enough to ride if only a bit before jumping off it doing a backflip.

Slowing down a bit I push my hair off my face and my vision becomes flooded with purple. I know this exact palette of colors.

I jump towards this purple wall in the middle of the ocean and grab onto a pair of red horns.

Levia, and of course, Scylla just lands behind me and wraps her arm around me like when we were on the bike. Now *This* is something you don't see often.

In the distance, a BIG ship invades the view it has the trademark Two-Stars where the name should've been.

"Another one..." I was a little discouraged at the timing of their attack.

"More of them?! What the hell do they gain defeating you?!"

"At the very least a good-looking suit"

"It does look good on you..." She muttered to herself but I decided to ignore her this time.

"Levia! Ramming Speed!"

"Wait!" Scylla barely got those words out of her mouth.

I look into Levia's eyes, it looks back at me and immediately after that it starts to move towards the ship increasing its speed every



second.

"Are you going in without your uniform?! Kai!" Scylla yelled to make sure I got her message even though she's right behind me..

"I don't need more than my jacket to deal with these jackoffs! Faster! Levia!" As ordered the Horned Serpent-Dog sped up even more.

"Take her back to land if she tires out again, ok boy?" I whispered to Levia.

We were now close enough to see the One-Stars Students on the ship yelling and running around getting some cannons pointed our way.

"He 's Here!" I heard someone yell to tell everyone I'm on my way.

We get closer to them and after a bit I transform my jacket into the Tail and Back Armor of the Onslaught Regalia.

I pat Levia on the head, use my tail and the speed we built up to launch me to the ship as Levia stopped and avoided cannot shots.

Flying over the ship I do a bit of scouting, pinpointing the highest places and the routes to them as well as the command rooms located on the stern of the boat.

Now I'm losing altitude and see a cluster of one-stars waiting for me with guns and spears pointed my way.

"YOU'LL HAVE TO DO BETTER THAN THAT!"

As I got in range I spun around, smashing away the spears with my tail, some of them with the students still attached to them. The bullets bounced off the armor in my back as I crashed on top of them, knocking all of them out.

"I'm enjoying my trip here, better end this quickly!"

I start to run towards the center of the ship, beating and throwing overboard many of the One-Stars students with either tails or fists, whichever was closer to them.

Turning right I was making my way through the port of the ship, yet again hitting many students into the water and others being crushed by my back armor.

About a minute of running I reach the center of the boat, still a couple of meters away from the very center, once I get there...

I'm splitting this fucker in two!

One last turn and I realized that the very center has been remodeled into an arena. Clever move for a bunch of pigs.

I look around to see if there is anyone hidden and, as expected, quiet, stupidly quiet. I force myself to stop and keep looking around to see if I can find out what their plan is.

Something is coming my way.

It 's too fast.

I barely managed to dodge whatever was flying towards me and get a small cut off my right cheek.

It came from the back of the ship, from the command room. Strange, I don't remember the Fishing Club having any skills that could do that.

I look to where this object landed, and I see a spear but with a cone in one end and an unproportionally big blade at the other.

"You have slowed down!" A voice I've heard before echoes through the ship.

"Let's just say that I've been enjoying myself lately! **Izanagi** !"

"That is no longer my name, just like you I have changed my name!"

"Wasn't it enough to just copy my friends and you decided to copy me?!"

"More or less" He is lying, I can feel it. "Now get ready 'Kai!' You face Siegfried!"

From the back of the ship a shadow jumped towards me.

Landing violently, the ship swayed a little while everyone watched from afar.

I noticed his clothes, a well kept black suit, the same as the man I met last night was wearing...

"The Dragonslayer Siegfried? You could've picked something a little less obvious, don't you think?!"

"I'm not here just for you! You hold something I want and, If you simply must know it, I'm also here for the venomous frog of your companion"

"Without your shit will you be able to get her though? She IS really strong..."

He picked up his spear and got to the opposite side of me. With each of us on one side of the arena we mimicked eachothers footwork so we were always facing the other as we moved.

"I must say though, it's a nice handicap that you're trunks instead of a full set of armor"

"I've beaten you once, I'll do it again!" He 's making time for something? or is he still a piece of shit and decided to waste my time?

I clean the smallest drop of blood out of my cheek with my right hand and slowly raise both my hands over my right shoulder.

Suddenly he jumps towards me, I react by mere instinct and block his spear with *Mind*. An Oodachi.

With his attack blocked he steps back.

"That's a big sword! Overcompensating?"

"I can show you it's more like mimicking if you want!"

With an annoyed face he charged again at me and we clashed for a good while. Sending shockwaves that made it impossible to stand up, for anyone else, and creating the kind of waves you'll see on storms.

"It's been a fucking while since I had a fight this difficult!" I yelled to Izanagi, recognizing his new strength.

"It's about to get much worse!" He took a small vial with red liquid inside, Crushed it with his hand and sprayed it across his clothes.

"What the-?!" A surge of energy pushed me back and the strong wind kept me from opening my eyes.

The wind stopped and I was able to see again.

A Full Plate Black Armor stood where Izanagi was. Both the stupidly big Blade and the spike of the spear were now far longer and each was of a different color, the blade was white and the spike was black.

"(Blood... More... Power...)"

"A gift from someone very special!" He extended his arms sideways showing off his new armor that covered everything but his mouth.

"Care to elaborate?!" I told him to see if I could squeeze some info out of him and to silently swap from *Mind* to *Might*. A Halberd.

"It matters not to you" The shit-eating grin on his face tells me that he wanted to deliver that exact line, exactly like that...

I point the tip of Might towards the audience.

"LISTEN UP YOU WORTHLESS PIGS! IF YOU DON'T WANT THIS SHIP SPLIT IN TWO AND THREE HUNDRED FUCKING METERS BELOW SEA LEVEL! LISTEN TO ME AND SHOOT THIS ASSHOLE!"

Izanagi was stunned at how loud my voice was rather to what the message was. But he finally returned from wherever the fuck his mind went.

"They have all been bribed Kai! They will never hel-"

\*boom\* A cannonball hit him dead in the face.

A dense smoke cloud formed where he was, he was still standing there, confused as to what happened I presume.

It's my chance of getting a clean hit.

I rush in and put all my strength into a big swing, the floor creaks as the wind takes away the smoke and Izanagi is finally free of the cloud. But it's too late for him.

I swing aiming for his chest, I'm not letting him get back up again!

\*Clank\*

Steel with steel clashed. The floor broke as Izanagi was sent flying to the back of the ship, Crashing into the command room

\*plap\* \*plap\*

The sound of liquid dripping finally reached my ears.

It wasn't water.

My Halberd is clean, that can only mean one thing...

"Fuck, he managed to counter attack... that's a big hole..." I said while examining the wound in my stomach as thick tasteless liquid filled my mouth and the smell of iron got into my nose.

I start to look for Izanagi, but I can't find him. Asshole, probably trying something lame like a sneak atta-

\*Clank\*

I got hit from behind and flew in the same direction Izanagi went.

I crashed through a wall, immediately regaining my balance and landing *Almost* hitting the other wall.

"(Blood... Power... More...)"

That again? Wasn't it telling me about Izanagi's power up?

"(BLOOD...)"

My wound started to heal really fast.

"(POWER...)"

My blurred vision returned to normal.

Fully healed I tried not to make any sense of it and walked back into battle.

Scylla was fighting in my place, her bloodcurdling screams were unsettling to say the least.

Then something weird happened to my eyes, I could see everything around me, literally. It was very off putting.

"(MORE!)"

The sound of chains breaking and steel moving floods my thoughts.

My head and eyes started to hurt, badly. Unbearably badly as I screamed in pain holding my head, I stumbled but never fell to the ground.

"NEVER AGAIN!"

In my mind a pair of eyes with three pupils each looked at me like they wanted to eat me.

The pain went away.

Only for it to kick in again a second later not on my head, but all around my body.

I take a look at what is causing it and a terrifying sight enters my view.

Many claw-like Blue-ish Green spikes pointing to the sky all around my body burst through my skin and bathe themselves in my blood.

Standing at the edge of a broken wall on what would normally be a second floor, The Blood loss was too much and I finally pass out, still standing.

---

### ***Top of Honno Tower***

\*Crack\*

"I'm so sorry Lady Satsuki..." Soroi apologized after the handle of the cup he was holding broke in his hand. Letting the rest of the cup fall and break on the ground.

Satsuki took a moment to answer, she was angry, but not at her butler.

Inside of her something, call it her instincts, told her that something bad had happened and, naturally, her relaxed expression became her usual frowning.

"Is okay Soroi..."

While gathering the shards of the cup soroi noticed that this was not one of the ones she normally uses. It was the one Kai always uses, it's far sturdier than the normal ones since he has broken many other cups in the past and Satsuki had this one made for when he visits her.

"Contact Kai when you're done, Soroi..." She also noticed the rare cup.

"At once" He had just finished cleaning the mess and dialed the number of Kai's phone on Satsuki's phone.

Soroi gave Satsuki the phone while it rang.

But she then heard something she had never heard before.

The call timed out.

"(What?!)" She started to lose her temper, Kai will never leave his phone neither will he ever let Satsuki wait.

Two things crossed her mind, which one was more terrifying for her was to be debated.

Either Kai ran away with that Girl.

or

He is in trouble.

"Iori!" She ordered Soroi to call Shiro, and moments later he was on the big screen.

"Lady Satsuki" Iori bowed slightly.

"What's Kai's status?"



"(Kai? She never calls him that...) He reported this morning that there was nothing relevant other than the Manga club attacking them, but they have since been taken care of"

"What is he doing now?"

"If I'm correct he should be on the private beach of that resort. Did something happen?"

"He doesn't answer his phone"

"What?!" Shiro typed something really quickly and his second screen showed a 'connecting' symbol just for it to disappear short after.

"Dammit Kai, where are you?"

Iori's panic only made Satsuki worry more and more.

\*plip\* \*plip\* Just when they were all on the verge of despair, Shiro's screen showed an incoming call. From Kai.

"KAI?!"

"It's not him" A female voice answered, Scylla's voice.

"(That Little Rat!...)" Satsuki took a deep breath and relaxed herself.

"I need your help! Kai fell unconscious after dealing with Izanagi or Siegfried or whatever his name was!"

"Izanagi?! Doesn't matter, how is he doing?"

"He had a big wound on his stomach but it's gone now, he is also really pale and cold..." Scylla's voice was really quiet, she was worried.

"He lost a lot of blood! Shi-" -He realized he was still on the call with Satsuki- "Make him wear as much of his uniform as you can, then feed him one of those bars he took with him, any one of them will do. Kai is not so weak as to leave us like that"

"O-o-okay!" She was nervous.

Satsuki kept quiet during this conversation to not hinder Kai's treatment. Inside of her not only her heart was beating like crazy but she also wanted to be in Scylla's place. But like always, she snuffed her feelings out, showing them before the big plan was set in motion will result in weakness and she knows Kai also won't approve of that.

For how long have they both bottled up their feelings for each other? Especially leaking a very small portion of them when they were alone.

If... When the time comes, and it will, she'll have to choose between Kai or the Cause she was entrusted by her father years ago, she knows what she will choose, but will she be able to live after that?

That is Satsuki's biggest fear, to face the end and what lies beyond without him.

"Oh thank god! He's breathing normally again..." Scylla's voice was music to their ears.

Iori muted Scylla's call and spoke to Satsuki.

"If I may, Do I send the Nursery club to get him back?"

"I want him back and stabilized before the sun sets!"

"And not a second later Lady Satsuki" Iori lowered his head and the transmission ended.

Satsuki sat on her chair and just like always, Soroi already had a new cup full of tea for her to drink. She took the cup and finished the tea in record time.

She will only fully calm down once Kai is safe back home.

---

**Author's Note** : Sorry for the delay on this ch. I did some things on the meantime, including but not limited to, learning how to use a certain software for the pics you saw on wattpad (and on Insta) and just if there is a bit of confusion: That last Satsuki part was supposed to be on the next ch but it fit better here, so do not worry, we will return to the ass kicking on the next ch :3

(I will also make another Intermission ("Intermission 4") on wattpad and on insta for yall to see the designs ya missed that I made for this fic)

Dragon8641(1)/Charioth

(Follow Instagram dragon86411 for more relatively good drawings ;3)

## **Intermission 3 (on here :3)**

Sup yall, Charioth/Dragon8641 here. I wanted to know how yall liking it so far and of course celebrate the 2k (dis was planned for 1k but I got busy, sorry :3) Next chapter is already in editing phase so just you wait a lil longer :D

As a way to celebrate the 2k reads I have made a drawing of Satsuki (Yes, all the Original Art yall been seeing here is mine, which is yet another reason why I took so long on this part :P)

**Yall have to go to wattpad or to Insta to see her... (Blame FFN! :3)**

And now a bit more serious.

The next chapters from now on will have less/no drawings since this ch almost Ended ME. Butt in return yall can expect longer ch.

-I may also do a bit of a reboot, just a small alteration to the very firsts chapters since I DEFINITELY did not had planned to go this far when I started.

-I gave MC a face, since the drawings looked far too weird to slap in without a face. Ya think it is good? or I just leave him faceless to those more interested in this being more of an X reader thing? Or do yall don even care?

-"Monumental" is by far the least read chapter, did yall zoom through it or just skip it? If either I'd like to know why (though I think its cuz it has very lil of the Ship and I probably lost a couple of readers there and its entirely understandable)

Once again all these pics will be on insta and twitter Dragon86411

Thank yall once again for your patience and for your support :D

Charioth/Dragon8641

# Dragon Within

The endlessly white canvas appeared once again in front of me.

To my left, the Enormous Lock, now only being held by a couple of cracked chains.

To my right, the red skeleton that is Izanami, staring blankly at the Lock like she was hypnotized. She was missing her right hand which I wear as a gauntlet on my right hand in this dream world.

\*Growl\*

A menacing sound came from my left, from beyond the lock, no, from inside it.

I blink.

Wasn't the lock farther away?

I turn my head to examine it but as I try to move my legs, they don't respond. While trying to move them with my arms I blink again.

Now the lock is Definitely closer.

I blink once again.

It's now three feet away from me and I can see clearly through the keyhole: An eye moving maddingly to all directions.

"It 's calling to me"

Izanami grabbed my hand.

"To us"

The keyhole starts to shine a blue-ish green light and the eyes are now still, but it wasn't only one eye, there were six of them.

I turned to face it and suddenly, the feeling of something cold surrounded my body but both my hands stayed warm.

My attention is fixed on the chains, I can break them with Izanami.

As that knowledge entered my mind, Izanami banished into a dark and red mist that surrounded me before transforming into a pair of Black Claws replacing the single gauntlet.

I reached for the chains slowly with the black claws and with the slightest touch, the chain banished into thousands of small red threads, Life Fibers.

I stopped for a second to wonder what it could mean, but as the Life Fibers were absorbed by the claws my madman logic told me: "It's Power"

Without any doubt in my head I took down the other chains in a similar manner but with each I took down, the thing inside crashed into the lock from the inside, It wanted out of there.

The silhouette of a man in Dark Armor forms in my mind.

Izanagi... that's right! That's where I was before entering here...

"That's what you wHiAsVhE to eliminate?" I stopped before the last chain as a female voice spoke, it wasn't Izanami it was different, more Mature if that makes any sense.

"Yes"

"My name is Tiamat, but once you let me free, we will become one and that will no longer be the case, give us all Three yet another new name and our power will be unmatched!"

Just a second in thought and I slash away the last chain, letting Tiamat free as I'm blinded by light and I see the six eyes rush towards me.

---

"KAI!" Scylla shouted when she saw the body of Kai being pierced by many spikes, what she didn't notice was: those spikes came from inside his body.

"What the-" Siegfried was also confused as to what happened, he wasn't the one to do that.

Their fight was in a stalemate, Scylla could not get to Kai, for Siegfried will land a hit on her and if Siegfried attacks, Scylla will use it to escape.

Just as both of them were about to make their move, A pillar of White light with a Green Aura appeared in Kai's place together with a scream of pain and resolve.

---

I have never felt so alive.

A warm, almost too hot of a sensation spread from my hands towards the rest of my arms.

A cold feeling across my body woke me up completely from that dream world.

The wall of white light started to dim down as my strength grew, wounds healed and the maw of power devoured me.

T: "(You Know what we are! Say Our Name!)"

A deep breath as my new clothes tighten up until they're skin-tight and a pair of straps hit my chest with a \*whip.\*



A fleeting wind blows from below my face and makes two strands of my hair shine with Green Glow as it passes.

The warmth and cold I felt before disappeared as I flexed my arms forcing something to get out. From each arm a Set of Eyes burst upwards through the shoulders.

**" *Jin'i Rengō! Kamui Ryūketsu!*" (*Life Fibers Union! Kamui Ryūketsu!*)**

I look around, everything is moving like in slow motion.

T: (Perfect Fit!)

"(Indeed)" I moved around a bit "(Though it feels like I'm wearing less than it looks, almost like I'm naked...)"

T: "(We're not simple clothes, we are one in the same, but you can say we are your skin if that makes you comfortable)"

"(We'll talk more later...)" I'm not sure if that makes it better...

T: "(You have Ten minutes maximum until you pass out from blood loss, details later)" She's efficient, I like it!

"More than enough" A burst of wind came out of my back clearing smoke and pushing away rubble.

Time resumed as normal.

The "crowd" was speechless, the only difference was that Scylla was happy and Siegfried was angry.

"Wh-a- I-I don't get it! What are you?!" Siegfried was the first to speak.

I take a step forward realizing I'm now wearing heels. That's gonna be difficult to get used to...

\*Clack\*

"It matters not to you!" Not that I know anyways...

"You're alive!" Scylla jumped towards me in excitement.

I caught her and, as expected, she was very light. With this Kamui I could now withstand her incredible strength.

"I'm not going nowhere, girl"

"I'm so glad you're okay" She hugged me tightly with a broken voice and tears in her eyes.

"Sorry to interrupt you Scylla, but I must do something and I need your help, ok?"

She wiped away her tears and smiled "Ok!"

I whisper the plan to her, she is to make a quick escape route while I finish Siegfried and if worst comes to worst, she'll join me in the fight. I'm not sure of what I'm capable of, better get her out of the line of fire.

She then ran towards the back of the boat and jumped off it  
Summoning Levia to ride and stand by.

"Now! Where were we? Siegfried..." I taunted him as I cracked my knuckles and neck.

"On the part where I kill you, for real" He is Really angry.

As he got into a fighting stance I could feel the pressure of his presence, similar to what it felt when Satsuki fought Matoi way back... Matoi got me really angry with her talk about bringing down Honnouji... now I'm fucking pissed!

We slowly walked towards each other and with every step,  
shockwaves over shockwaves of power launched everything around

us off the ship and lost into the water.

As we got in range of close combat, a bigger showave than all the previous ones sent the entire building we both crashed into flying far into the ocean. Only the two of us saw the short exchange of blows during that shockwave.

"Now you're going serious?! I take it that the hit from before was just a love tap?! Brother!" If I get him to lose his temper, I win instantly.

"Let me repay what you did to me all those years ago! While I rotted away in a box you are trying to conquer the fucking world?! And what the fuck is that you're wearing?!" A bit more and he's done for.

We want to save it, by getting rid of what brought him to life... but he can't know that.

"I want the world! But not for me! Someone *Very Special* wants it and I must serve it on a silver platter!"

An overhead swing from the bladed side of his spear, blocked by my left claw.

A swift motion to push away my hand followed by a lunge with the other end of his spear. He has the range, but I have the power.

With my right hand I parry his lunge and kick him in the stomach... The heels make the kick look far more painful than it is.

Siegfried is launched into the open ocean as the horn of another boat similar to this one's sounds. Soon after a crash is heard in the second boat sending many one star students into the water.

Lucky shithead...

I hear him yelling incoherently, either cursing me and/or giving orders.

\*Boom\*

An *Impressive* Number of cannonballs can be seen in the air coming to destroy the ship I'm on. I have like 5 seconds before the land, better scram.

Quickly I prepare myself for a jump and launch myself into the cannonballs leaving the boat shaking back and forth.

Jumping from cannonball to cannonball, I make my way through the fire and clench a fist right as I step on the last one.

This is gonna feel good!

Descending into the second ship fist prepared for one of, if not THE strongest punch I've ever dealt.

Siegfried got in position, Glaive in hand and pointed at me.

**" *After the Lightning!*" (INAZUMA NO ATO!)**

The Punch landed on the point of the blade side. A deafening thunder drowned the screams of everyone as an enormous wave formed around the ship and, if it hadn't collided with the first boat, It could have done severe damage to the private beach.

The boat sank a bit since below it there was far less water than before. The shockwave passed and the boat started to go up. Eyes locked with each other, we were both stuck to the deck as the weight and strength of the boat surfacing dragged us with it.

The ship was airborne now, throwing everyone on it even higher, exchanging strikes on the air Siegfried still had the upper hand on range, forcing me to block most of his attacks until finally we struck each other away from the other.

"Is that all you've got?!" I kept taunting him but this time my voice sounded far louder and otherworldly.

"Not For A Second!"

He charges some kind of attack with his spear but he was blasted to the deck by a wave of air I sent with my claws, interrupting the charge up.

He lands on the back area of the ship with such force that the ship's nose rises above the water.

"I ASKED: IS THAT ALL YOU GOT?!" The water stirred at the sound of my voice.

He doesn't answer, he just stood still on the crater that his body made.

Halfway through my descent I yelled at everyone that might be close.

"IF ANY OF YOU WANT TO LIVE, GET THE FUCK AWAY FROM THE SHIP!" This time even the trees in the distance were shaking.

The back thrusters propelled me downwards landing on the nose of the ship. Like if this ship was a seesaw, it tilted the other way and now the back of the ship was the part hanging over the water.

It's been a while since I last used this technique...

A bit of water splashed on my back.

I was going to slip one ship in two... now...

Crossing my arms and positioning my hands to each side of my head red lightning started to flow around me and time slowed down once again.

I: "(What aWwAaNiTtSs you at the finish line?)"

There is only one answer to that question: A Pale Beauty with Long Black Hair and a Force of Will that can destroy any and all walls it encounters, Satsuki Kiryuin.

I: "(Then waste no time and unleash yourself!)"

The green border of the claws became Blood Red and more lightning started to appear coming out of all my fingers but my thumbs.

" *Killer Move...* "

Preparing to charge forward my eyes widened and the frown on my face almost started to hurt.

" **YAMATA NO OROCHI!** "

My sight became a blazing yellow for a second as I traveled in a straight line through both of the tilted ships while swiping my claws.

With my both feet on land and surrounded by an incredible heat, I looked at the results of My Strongest Technique from atop a cliff. Two explosions back to back, followed by the sound of steel clashing with itself and then sinking into the water.

Both of the ships, only their Noses sinking were visible. And they were not just split in two but in four hot red sections like if someone had drawn four "X" on their centers, each just barely by the side of the other.

The steam made it look like the ocean itself was on fire, students floating all around the water and some of them still jumping off the remains of the ships.

Siegfried was nowhere to be found, either somewhere below sea level or in pieces floating around, I aimed at him after all, the destruction of the ships was to set an example.

T: "(One Minute)"

Standing on the peak of the cliff I see Scylla way off in the distance, probably ended up there because of the tidal wave Siegfried and I created when we clashed.

I make a signal at her before I lose consciousness and she starts to move really fast towards me. When she gets close enough I notice that she is actually riding both Rex and Levia at the same time, that explains the rise in speed.

My vision starst to get blurry, fuck... I'm outta time... ha, what a Déjà vu...

As my body begins to fail me the last thing I see is Scylla rising from the pitfall and landing in front of me.

"Kai? Kai?! KAI!"

I opened my eyes to an endlessly dark room, I returned to the Dream World...

I shaked my head to adjust to the low light but when I saw the sleeping Izanami, her body was completely visible like if the sun was in its zenith.

"Let her sleep"

The gentle voice of a mature woman, yet for some reason very threatening came from my back.

I turned around to see what should definitely be Tiamat and braced myself to whatever she might look like.

For a second it thought it was Satsuki looking around her own body, but then I noticed the Silver hair and those beastly eyes from before barely hidden by her bangs.

"Interesting... Is this...?"

"Yes..."

"Fascinating" What exactly does she mean by that?

"So... that's you?" I questioned her form.

"At least for now, unlike Izanami, I had no 'Human' form before this"

"RIGHT!" Tiamat got a little startled.

"What is it?" She answered calmly.

"What is all this about the lock?" If she is the one that has been talking to me all this time...

"I've been with you for a long time, longer that you might think"

"Elaborate, please..."

She asked me to sit down so she could start the story.

"There was a man and a woman, This woman's Silver hair illuminated the area with an unnatural rainbow light"

"Ragyo?!"

"And This man holded you on his arms, he handed You to this woman" She ignored my reactions.

"..."

"What came next was multiple attempts to put me inside of you, all of them officially failed but some of me remained, however you were not the only one who was subjected to this"

"You don't mean..."

"This man had already been there once before, also with another human infant"

"Izanagi..."

As the cogs in my head turned, Tiamat interrupted me.

"I believe that 'sold' is the word you might be looking for?"



"My father sold us both to Ragyo... then Izanagi and I made it out somehow..."

"But of course, these experiments were not reserved to your lineage alone... that silver haired girl in purple, and the one I look like, they were also part of them"

"Scylla and Satsuki?!" Though I did know about Satsuki's...

"I lack the details on theirs but they definitely smell like Life Fibers, just like you, that Izanagi and... Ryuko Matoi"

"Matoi?! What does she have to do with this?"

"Didn't it seem weird to you that she can wear a Kamui far easier than Satsuki, Scylla and you?"

"Then... Is Matoi related to the monster that is Ragyo?"

"Most likely, or she has someone like me in her, perhaps the doing of Isshin Matoi? It is surprisingly difficult to tell, either that or the smell of her Senketsu is really strong"

"More surprising is that you can tell me all this when Izanami knew almost nothing..."

"It was her finding her way inside of you that got me free, so she deserves some credit. I made it my duty to deliver this message to the one whom I wear and that they may do whatever they want with this information"

"Why? ('The one I wear' that's cryptic...)"

"We have been together since you could properly see, I'm just like a part of you at this point"

"Yeah, I'm still not sure how to feel about that..."

"If I'm correct, didn't you call Izanami something along the lines of *Undead Fibers* ?" It felt like she tried to change the topic.

"Yeah, they act quite different from the Life Fibers I'm used to, so we came up with a new name for them"

"Clever"

This conversation has been feeling weird, like talking with myself, I suspect is tied to this 'part of you' shenanigans... I'll try to meditate it all once I'm awake...

"For now, please rest, It'll be a shame if you were to die from this ordeal" Ryūketsu sat down and pointed to her lap.

I leaned down to rest and she spoke again.

"Though I must say: It was Quite Bold Your Choice of Attire"

It took me a second to realize what she meant.

"Wait! 'Choice'?!"

---

Scylla just landed on the water after hearing Kai's plan.

Just seconds before landing a shockwave started to push her away.

Not too many shockwaves later One of the fighters was sent out flying but was 'caught' by another big boat. She noticed that it was wearing all black.

"(It wasn't Kai, thank God...)" She was relieved.

But her good mood was cut short by the sound of tens of cannonballs being shot towards her general direction.

She swam away from the line of fire on top of Levia and just about managed to see a blueish green lightning move through the

cannonfire.

Once again she wa reliev-

**" *After the Lightning!*" (INAZUMA NO ATO!)**

Unable to keep her eyes open by the loud thunder, she instinctively retreated blindly. It was the correct choice, when she finally could open her eyes she was riding a tidal wave that, if not for Rex and Levia's work, would have dragged her far into the ocean.

But the wonder did not stop there. When she looked back at the battlefield, the second boat was now floating in the air.

A terrifying voice carried by the extreme winds shook her to the bones, she could not make out the words and she did not want to. A black and a green dot floating and clashing over the descending ship, she knew who she cheered for.

With A boom the black dot struck the boat, lifting the front of the ship and the terrifying voice became louder and paralyzed her again.

"IF ANY OF YOU WANT TO LIVE, GET THE FUCK AWAY FROM THE SHIP!" She could not tell whose voice it was, it was too wavy. But the owner was the one who made her freeze in fear right now as well as before.

The green dot suddenly smashed the nose of the ship, making it tilt the other way, that was Kai's doing and she knew not what to say.

**" *YAMATA NO OROCHI!*"**

As the name of the devilish Eight-Headed Snake was announced, destruction followed. Both of the boats were nothing more than blazing hot ruins waiting to sink into the ocean floor.

"(KAI? WHERE'S KAI?!)" Unsure of who was the one behind this carnage the Silver Haired girl scanned the battlefield for the one she loves.

This man was waving at her from the top of a cliff. "When did he make it up there?" she asked herself. Even knowing that this man she loved so much Did Not love her back, she cared not, her first instinct was to run full speed towards him.

When she finally could see his face, He looked a bit pale, maybe he got injured?

In a hurry, she imitated what Kai did to get on top of the first boat and got launched off Levia and Rex while returning them to their sleeves so they would not weigh her down.

She landed in front of Kai before she could say anything, he fell unconscious on top of her. For a second she thought it was a hug but as Kai's body got heavier she got worried.

"Kai? Kai?! KAI!"

Once back at the resort she heard Kai's phone ring, the number labeled by a name she wished she had never learnt, Satsuki Kiryuin.

She did not answer that call, why? She didn't know or perhaps she did but denied it.

A minute later the phone rang again, this time it was another name: Shiro Iori. but the call timed out again.

"He can help me!" Dialing back the last number she managed to get Iori to answer.

"KAI?!"

"It's not him" Scylla felt a cold stare from somewhere but decided to ignore it for now. "I need your help! Kai fell unconscious after dealing with Izanagi or Siegfried or whatever his name was!"

"Izanagi?! Doesn't matter, how is he doing?"

"He had a big wound on his stomach but it's gone now, he is also really pale and cold..." Scylla's voice was really quiet, she was worried.

"He lost a lot of blood! Shi-ahem- Make him wear as much of his uniform as you can, then feed him one of those bars he took with him, any one of them will do. Kai is not so weak as to leave us like that"

"O-o-okay!" She was nervous.

When Kai passed out, he was completely naked, thus she had him wear the Four Stars beforehand.

But the bars were a different matter. When they arrived some days ago, Kai told her where they were located for some reason and though she had no idea how they tasted, she thought it was some kind of special supply so she never asked for one.

Once back with the (as labeled) Nutrient Bar she had no idea how to make him eat it, since the bar was really tough and Kai could not bite it.

But an idea came across her mind: if she pre-chewit. It sounded gross but there was no other way. She saw him eat a couple of this since they arrived so she expected them to not taste horrible.

As she managed to bite a piece off, she could barely contain her vomit at the horrible taste of the bar but endured it for Kai.

Questions popped on her head: Is he that tough? Does he like them? But she focused on feeding Kai and finally progress was visible.

"Oh thank god! He's breathing normally again..." Some seconds of silence passed "Hello?"

"I will be sending a team of medics to get him and bring him back, if you can, place him on a couch and drag him to the outside" Iori returned to the call full of orders.

"Yes, we are on the top floor and there is a helipad, or do I bring him all the way to the lobby?" Scylla was fully obedient, she wanted to aid Kai.

"Excellent, I'll send an Helicopter, they'll be there in half an hour at worst!"

"Thank you!"

"While we wait, Shirogane, there are questions that need answering"

"Ah... yes" She felt like she was going to present an important test.

Iori asked about Izanagi, Siegfried and his fight with Kai, unfazed by any of the weird details, like when Kai was pierced by many little spikes and the complete annihilation of a fleet.

The only words that were not a question were mumbles of which she only deciphered one word: Kamui...

A helicopter just parked on the helipad, its blades still on as Sixteen girls in Gray nurse outfit, all of them with a big Black Star on them carried Kai on a stretcher, they were so fast that they almost left Scylla behind.

Once on the helicopter, they did not ask anything to her nor did they make any noise as they plugged Kai into a number of machines.

The only ones that somewhat talked were the pilot and the person on the co-pilot seat, the first one's light pink hair overflowed the military helmet she was wearing and the second one's Blonde Twintails and Sharp Teeth scared Scylla.

These girls spoke about Kai and what he was doing all the way here while there was a full blown war going on at Honnouji and why he

hadn't told them.

"(It seems like he has some fans...)" She was discouraged at this though, 'more rivals' was all she made from that.

---

"How long until he returns?" Satsuki asked Soroi.

"Five minutes and he has already been stabilized"

"And the girl?"

"On board in the Helicopter..."

"Hm..." Satsuki was angry, even if her face did not show it, in the years Soroi had served he learned to read her mood better than anyone "When they arrive, make sure she is out of Honnouji Academy within the hour"

"Of course My Lady" While Soroi feared for the fate of the Silver haired girl that angered his master he could do nothing. She has to have a good reason for such an order.

Time passed quickly for when they stopped talking the Helicopter had landed on Honno Tower, they had to lower their defenses a little but it was worth it.

Satsuki's aura was the strongest Soroi had felt when she was not fighting. If there were to be any birds in the area they would have fled by now.

"Take him to his room" Straight to orders, Soroi did the same as always and stood there waiting for his own.

The One-Star students quickly ran past satsuki to the inside of Honno Tower.

"Kinkyū, Hakodate. You two return to your posts" Satsuki turned and started to walk inside to follow Kai.

"With all due respect, I would like to keep checking on K-Tadasuki personally..." The pink haired girl in military equipment asked with courage, but it ran out mid sentence when she almost called Kai by his name, something strictly prohibited.

Satsuki stopped with a \*Clack\* and the air around got extremely heavy.

"It was mentioned that he was fine and he needs rest, I doubt this is of high priority to the leader of the Nursing Club"

"Y-you're right Lady Satsuki... we will be going once the girls return..." Rei Kinkyū as well as Omiko Hakodate were frozen at the glare Satsuki gave them in combination with those words that could only mean: 'Leave. Now.'

Satsuki said nothing else as she walked into her own room to hear what Iori had to say about Kai's analysis.

"Speak Iori"

"Yes, from what they gathered we have confirmation that Kai is in in great condition, though that should be clinically impossible due to the damage sustained It is clear that he is in no danger whatsoever"

"Good, what else"

"I will now show some images from the blackboxes of the Fishing Club's Ships"

The screen showed many pictures: of Kai wearing Ryūketsu, Izanagi and of the destruction that ended the battle.

"From what Scylla told me This Kamui appeared out of nowhere, I will interview Kai once he is fully awake"

"Do that, I had him placed on his room up here and he will be under my direct supervision"



"And Scylla?"

"Shirogane as already been dispatched by Soroi just a couple of minutes ago, she should be leaving Honnouji soon"

"I'm assuming she is on our side now?"

"If not then she is definitely under Tadasuki's direct control, which is exactly the same. Do not tell the Elite Four about Tadasuki's current status, they do not need to know..."

"Inumuta already knows so I will tell him not to reveal this info"

"Excellent Work Iori"

"Thank you Lady Satsuki" Iori lowered his head and the big screen stopped transmitting.

"With this out of the way..." Soroi knew this was his cue to ask:

"May I prepare something Mylady?"

"Close everything up and unless the sky itself is falling do not let anyone disturb me!" She was a little louder than usual.

"That will be done" Soroi bowed deeply and Satsuki entered her personal chambers.

"I need to change out of this demon for today..." That was the last thing Soroi heard from Satsuki as he walked out to the Elites Meeting room to follow his orders.

---

"Wait! 'Choice'?!" She couldn't mean...

"But I do, you choose our appearance as Ryūketsu"

"Huh... how?"

"With Izanami's influence you had the ability to 'customize' our transformed form, thus I had concluded that it was entirely your choice, was that not the case?"

Holding myself to not scream I calmed down and made some more questions.

"With Izanami's influence?"

"Remember that she is a different kind of Life Fibers? Just like that girl with her 'BloodHound' and that guy you just fought, they choose the form for their God Robes"

That explains Scylla being able to change its form rather than fully transforming...

"Can I... change it?"

"I'm afraid not. It was a one time thing, once Life Fibers had been tailored it's impossible to re do it"

FUUUUUUUUUUUUUUUCK

"Then I'll just have to endure it..."

"You don't seem very happy... though you'll like it since it looks similar to this woman's Junketsu"

"I would have liked more if it was a full set of armor..."

Out of nowhere a cold wind blows around us. Something tells me I might be in trouble once I wake up. That sensation lasts only a bit though as it's replaced with a known warmth, the one from my own bedroom.

"We'll... talk more later... I'm getting... sleepy..."

As soon as my eyes close, they open again. The same scenario is laid out in front of me, with some very distinctive differences. I was

laying on the lap of a Black-Haired Satsuki, the Real one.

Her blue eyes that once long ago froze me almost to death met mine with this gentle smile of hers that I have seen very few times before and it filled me with great joy.

I could not contain my dumb smile, this situation was almost like a dream. The only reason why I did not though so was that I had just been in a dream world.

My first instinct was to caress her cheek, my trembling hand moved slowly. Without saying anything, she took my hand and pulled it closer to her face.

"Have I told you how Beautiful you are Satsuki?"

"Only Forty-eight times, Kai" A strand of her hair fell on my face as she looked at me.

"I aim for A Thousand..." The scent of her hair relaxed me, almost making me fall asleep again.

Now that I think about it, I have never told her that I love her. I've written it *many* times, but I've never once said it out loud...

My voice failed me and the exhaustion was kicking in again, I failed to tell her once again.

She knows how I feel and I how she feels... We both would and could run away, but that would mean the end of the world. That is why she fights: To save the world and avenge her Father and Sister...

I blinked once, the clock marked late night and Satsuki was asleep in the same position, this is not good for her back...

I have no idea how long we spent like this and I couldn't care less. This, this is happiness to me...

And the existence of the abomination that is Ragyo is getting in my way... I do not care who I have to lie to, whose boots do I have to lick, who I have to become, betray or assassinate...

Satsuki-Is-Mine.

(A/N): Sup yall, hope you liked this part :D Once Again the Art I made for this part is on Intermission 5 at Wattpad with same name and stuff, Also on Insta Dragon86411 if thats more your thing. I hope yall keep showing your support, Thanks Yall.

Charioth/Dragon86411

## Beyond The Storm

Satsuki blinked and opened her eyes to a room she recognized. It was her own room from the Kiryuin manor.

She sat in front of a mirror when she heard footsteps. These footsteps had no ill intent nor were they trying to be silent as they got louder and louder, they were getting closer.

The door swung open and...

"Mom! Taiga cheated!" A young boy, no older than 6 yelled at Satsuki from the doorway. The light in his sky blue eyes could be seen through his black hair.

"Nothing of the sort!" The boy ran towards Satsuki, hugging her legs as a little girl, a couple of years older than the boy and with green eyes, walked into the room.

Feeling like she had no control over her actions, Satsuki spoke.

"Calm down you two, what happened Soichiro?"

Soichiro... She remembers the name of her father, the one who gave her the mission of ending Life Fibers. This kid had his name.

"We were playing and Taiga cheated!"

"I didn't cheat! Dad showed me some of his tricks in that video game!"

"(Dad?)"

"That still counts as cheating! Cheaters both you AND dad!"

"No it doesn't!"

"Yes it does!"

The kids' yells continued for a little and, as Satsuki was about to tell them to stop, a man knocked on the open door.

"What is happening here?" There was no threat on the man's words.

Satsuki recognized the voice of this man, she wants him all for herself after all.

However, when she raised her head to look at him, her heart shrunk.

This man was missing his right arm and left eye.

"(Uh?! H-how?)"

"Dad! Did you really show Taiga your moves on that game?!" The young boy immediately asked the man.

"Uh..."

"(Dad?!)" Satsuki was confused, but happy.

"So you did!" The young boy was angry at the man.

"I... uh... Fine, you got me..." The man gave up and smiled.

"Why, dad?!"

"Well... Taiga and your Aunt Nonon are... scary together..."

"Aunt Nonon as well?!" The boy got angrier.

"Mom! Help me!" The boy, still hugging Satsuki's legs, looked at her in the eyes and begged her.

"Then how about I help you fight them?"

"Ugh..." Both the girl and the man were scared.

"Yes! We'll beat their asses!"

"Language young man!"

"Sorry, mom..."

The scene disappeared and was replaced with a beach, leading to an endless pitch black ocean.

In the distance a thick mist formed, Satsuki saw something inside the mist, a pair of eyes.

A pair of beastly eyes, they tried to scare her, but Satsuki's spirit is way too strong.

With the stare down being won by Satsuki, a wind blows away the mist and the owner of those eyes is now exposed.

A Dragon head, nothing else, floating above the water and being held by thick blue ropes. Still staring down at Satsuki.

"Junketsu..."

When the dragon head heard it's own name, it started to twist and turn, trying to bite off the ropes that held it there.

Satsuki took a deep breath, then the Dragon head stopped moving.

"(Soichiro... Taiga...)" She recited in her head the names she heard just a minute ago.

That dream was more than just that, It was what lies beyond all this. Beyond Rago, beyond Life Fibers, beyond her own Ambitions.

For a second, only a second, she thought: "(Do I really deserve all that happiness?)"

A strong killing intent came from the dragon head. As Satsuki showed his moment of doubt, it was a chance for Junketsu to

escape her control.

But an ethereal green translucent silhouette appeared on Satsuki's back and it put a jacket on top of her shoulders.

"(Kai...)" She smiled and her doubts were erased.

The dragon head calmed down and submerged in the waters completely still.

She was convinced that she wanted that dream to be reality, to Make it reality.

But once again, she didn't stop there, her ambitions took it a step further. When the day comes and that dream becomes reality, Kai will be whole.

"Satsuki"

A voice whispered from everywhere and nowhere.

"Satsuki!"

The whisper became a scream.

"Satsuki!"

She woke up, with a bit of back pain she opened her eyes to the dimly lit room, the green eyes of the man she loves are as clear as if they were under broad daylight.

"Kai..." She rubbed her eyes and smiled unconsciously.

"Finally awake? There is only one more day till the Sudden Death Runoff Election..."

Kai had changed off his uniform, only keeping the jacket on his back he wore normal clothes for once in a long time.



He could be seen a little nervous and blushing a bit. She has only seen this side of him a couple of times, and she loved him more each time.

"What time is it?"

"Around Eight in the morning, you slept more than usual, did you have a good dream?"

"That I did, but I'll tell you about it later... for now, let's enjoy a nice cup of tea"

"Yeah, I need one of those..."

Satsuki wearing her nightgown and Kai on black robes. Satsuki got up from Kai's bed and grabbed his right arm, from there they made their way towards the meeting room to enjoy whatever Soroi made for them and of course, to drink some Tea.

---

Ryuko and Mako had just arrived at the Mankanshoku's house after being dropped off by Ira.

"Just a couple more days and I finally get to fight them..." Ryuko spoke to no one while Ironing Senketsu.

S: "(You're not excited?)"

"Is... difficult to say, I want to fight them, but I can't shake off this feeling that something is going to go incredibly wrong..."

S: "(Are you running away?)"

"HEY!"

S: "(I thought so. Ryuko, we'll win, we have each other after all)"

"Jeez... for a sailor uniform you sure are sentimental..." Ryuko's mood was miles better now.

S: "(I know I just said that, but...)"

"Yeah... Not only Gamagoori's two-stage transformation, Sanageyama's Shingantsu and..."

S: "(Tadasuki...)"

"We'll come up with something and win, then I'll make Kiryuin spit what she knows!"

S: "(Well said Ryuko!)"

### ***The morning after***

Explosions once again woke the Mankashoku early and Ryuko ran off to fight some students as training.

The pile of bodies kept increasing under Ryuko's feet when she noticed something.

Another pile of students, awake this time, were surrounding a girl. With silver eyes and hair wearing a purple uniform.

"That's Tadasuki's girl. What's she doing?"

Ryuko's question was answered as a big brute with a giant American Football was sent flying out of the ring the one-star students made.

"Whoa!"

S: "(She's strong...)"

Ryuko and Senketsu looked at each other and silently decided to help her out.

" ***Sen'i Sōshitsu!***"

With one swing of her scissor blade, Ryuko pierced through the wall of students and now stood by the side of the silver haired girl.

"Ryuko Matoi" The girl in purple uniform spoke her name.

"That's me alright, But who are you? All I know is you getting all close with Mr. Second in Command"

"My name is Scylla Shirogane, are you here to fight?" Scylla got her guard up, Ryuko noticed it was sloppy, but if she could manage to hurt a Two-Stars then it was obviously working.

"Whoa there, I'm here to help you, I know how annoying these guys can be and decided to give you a hand"

"And the catch is...?"

"I just wanna talk, somewhere more private though"

"Deal!" Scylla turned around, letting her back facing Ryuko.

Ryuko understood the message and, as they got back to back, more brutes like the one Scylla beat just a minute ago appeared.

"So, why are you here fighting all these idiots?" Ryuko started to talk completely calm, unfazed by the advantage in numbers their foes had.

"To be honest, I was looking for you" Scylla punched a one-star that rushed forward and sent him back to the crowd.

"What for? Another message or something?" Ryuko also punched a crowd back.

"Really I just wanted to talk" They both watched how two of the brutes brought an enormous American Football up to crush them both.

"TOO SLOW"

"TOO SLOW"

Both of the girls shouted at the same time while they ran towards the brutes.

In a panic, the brutes let the giant ball fall, Scylla was just below it, Ryuko ran past it and aimed her Scissor Blade at the brutes.

**" *Sen'i Sōshitsu!* "**

With a clean cut the brutes were left without their uniforms, but that wasn't all.

The giant ball started to go up, Scylla was pushing it.

Ryuko was stunned for a second, she could not believe the incredible strength this girl had. It took her a moment to regain her cool and jump out of the way of the ball getting thrown at the brutes.

**" *Leviath Rise!* "**

The ball, flying away from Honno City and dragging the brutes with it, missed Ryuko for an inch.

Scylla stood there with her "arm" extended, but her sleeve did not stop at the hand, it continued for a solid five meters and ended with the head of a Dog with Horns.

Many of the one stars ran away scared.

"WHOA! What was that?!"

"Oh, him?" She pointed at the Horned Dog "This is Levia" She did a cute smile while hugging the overgrown 'dog' with her left arm.

With the threat minimized the girls started to walk away. The rest of the one stars that jumped at them were slowly mowed down as they left the area.

***Back at the Mankanshoku's House***

"Oh, Ryuko! You're back!" As energetic as always, Mako received Ryuko.

"Yeah I ran int-"

"WOAH! That's the Vice-President's new girlfriend?! Welcome Welcome! :3"

"The name's Scylla and I'm NOT his girlfriend" The Silver haired girl and Ryuko took off their shoes and sat in the living room.

"Now. What is it you wanted to talk about Ryuko?" Scylla spoke to Matoi while grabbing a rice cookie.

"There are a couple of things, first of all, how much can you tell me about Tadasuki?"

"What for?"

"Tomorrow I'm gonna fight him and company"

"Right... I forgot that all the chaos outside had a reason..."

"So, are you gonna tell me?"

"Well... I don't really want to see him lose..."

S: "(That went as well as expected)"

"Huh?" Scylla looked around.

"You're right... Anyway, next question: Where did you two ran off to when we saw you leaving?"

"OH!" Scylla blushed and Mako got this look on her face between looking dumb and actually knowing what happened. "We went to the Beach..."

"And you're not his new girlfriend?" Mako interrupted.

S: "(New? He had some before, curious)"

Scylla's face turned to confusion but quickly became sad.

"Not that I care about it" Ryuko spoke her mind, as usual.

"Hey... Mako..." Scylla's voice was really silent.

"Gotcha! Ya want sum gossip, Right? :D" Mako poked Scylla with her elbow.

"Mako... ah fuck it!" Ryuko remembered that it is impossible to stop Mako once she gets fired up.

"ALRIGHTY, First of all: as far as I know the last girl he was with was Hakodate :3"

"That Shark-toothed chick from the Tennis club?"

Scylla got really invested in the story, like if she had already met who they just spoke of.

"Yep that very same, but they broke up for some reason, I don't really know why"

"Is that why she is so aggressive?"

"I'm sure she was like that from before they separated"

"H-How does she look like?"

"Hakodate-Senpai? She has blonde twintails, a big Zoom tube thingy on her eye and Tennis balls AAAAALL over her Uniform"

"She no longer has that uniform since I beat her, Mako..."

"That's right! I forgot. Tehee ;P" Both Ryuko and Scylla had a preoccupied look on their faces but Mako kept talking "Then If I'm not mistaken the girl before her was... right! Kinkyū-Senpai"

"And who's her?" Now even Ryuko herself was getting into the gossip, more so since they are related to one of the BIG shots than anything else.

"She's the Nursing Club Leader and a Two-Stars, also her pink hair is soooo cool"

"How come I've never seen them?"

"I Dunno! :P"

With a sigh both girls showed some disappointment, each for different reasons.

"Anythin else Mako?"

"Nope, not really, just some rumors that he was once seen with Non-Athletic Committee Chair"

"The Pink marching band chick?"

"That very same! Though again, that one is just a rumor though :p"

"Tadasuki's been busy on his years here..." Ryuko's eyes started into the infinite to see if she could use any of this information against Tadasuki.

The two times they clashed Ryuko had the advantage and even then Tadasuki managed to even the odds. Not to mention that: he wasn't fighting seriously at all, Ryuko could tell. No fighter that skilled would fight like that.

He can change styles and postures with every swing, making him impossible to predict, fast as all hell, not an idiot like Sanageyama was in their first fight and in neither of the encounters he took a single significant hit.

Yet he barely used these tools against her.

Ryuko understood why he was by the side of Kiryuin. That's why she considered him the scariest of the bunch.

He could show up to a street fight in pristine fancy clothes and walk away just as clean.

"Ryuko?" Mako's face was just centimeters away from her own. "You ok?"

"Yeah, I'm just thinking about tomorrow..."

"Doncha worry Ryuko! You'll do good I know it :D"

"Thanks Mako" Ryuko patted Mako's head.

Scylla watched silently but had to interrupt.

"I'll take my leave now, it's getting dark and I don't wanna overextend my welcome"

"Nonsense, a friend of Ryuko is a friend of mine :3"

"Friend huh..." Scylla gave her thanks and started to walk towards the front door followed by the other two girls "... Ah!"

"What is it?" Both Mako and Ryuko asked Scylla.

"I... I forgot that I don't have a house..."

"Ah!" The three girls stood there stunned but after an exchange of dumbfounded glances, they started laughing.

Mako suggested that Scylla spend the night in their house, Ryuko warned her about the bunch of perverts in there but ultimately decided to accept.

Scylla was far smaller than Ryuko, so they lent her one of the old shirts of Mako's Mom to use as PJ's and, after a loud dinner, they went to bed all cramped up.



S: "(Ryuko...)" Senketsu hung just by the side of the purple uniform Scylla wore, there was something odd about it.

"What is it, Senketsu?" She whispered.

S: "(This sailor Uniform... I think i've seen it before...)"

"And you waited till now to tell me?!" She, angry, still whispered.

The oddity became obvious as the 'eyes' on the ribbon opened, they were closed before. They eyed down Ryuko and Senketsu, then it returned back to sleep.

"Is that a..."

S: "(Kamui...)"

---

### ***Honno Tower***

There was music, the one that is played at ballroom dances.

Soroi stood by a small table that had the origin of the music on top.

Only steps accompanied the music.

A couple. A Man and a Woman, both around the same height, the man being just a bit taller than the woman, danced beautifully at the sound of the music.

This was the first time dancing with each other. Satsuki had learned too long ago.

But Kai, he could match her pace, amazed at this Satsuki asked him where he had learned to dance.

"I learned bit by bit over the years and, to be honest, I'm still worried I'll mess it up..."

"Nonsense. You're doing great!"

The genuine smile on her face threw Kai out of rhythm for a second, Satsuki noticed and slowed down so he could catch up.

Lost in their dance, the sun settled. It was only then the couple realized how long they have been dancing.

The first one to step away was Kai, his reasoning was that they should rest with a cup of Tea. Obviously, just an excuse to spend more time with Satsuki.

Knowing this, she agreed and they both walked to Satsuki's personal chambers to have dinner. While it was delicious and they both remarked to Soroi, he knew that Tadasuki could not tell the difference, this saddened the Loyal Butler but at the same time it made him happy.

A light blinked twice from Soroi's pocket. He took out a small device, not a phone, he had a bit of trouble with those.

"MyLady, If you allow me..." He asked for permission to leave.

"You may, Soroi"

"Thank You" With that the butler left towards the meeting room so he could answer the message he got from Shiro without bothering his master. "What is it, Shiro?" the small device showed Iori's face.

"Oh, uncle. I was going to inform that Scylla got in contact with Matoi and to check if Kai is finally awake"

"I'm afraid Master Kai has not yet woken up..." He lied, following his master orders of not being disturbed.

"That idiot! He better be up by tomorrow morning!"

"I'm sure he will, Anything else?"

"Jakuzure is desperately trying to contact Lady Satsuki, I believe she got hold of Kai's status, please tell her to call her back. That's all"

"I will, Shiro"

The transmission stopped and as if waiting for it, a giggle was heard from his Lady's quarters. It's been quite a while since Soroi last heard Satsuki's laugh, when it's all over, he'd thank Kai for this as well as many other things.

---

### ***8:30 AM Honnouji Academy - Sudden Death Runoff Election***

The red cocoon that guarded Honno Tower disappeared.

I sneaked my way to the courtyard where everyone was gathered, well, I say everyone but only Six individuals are the important ones.

Those being:

Ryuko Matoi

Ira Gamagoori

Inumuta Houka

Jakuzure Nonon

Uzu Sanageyama

Kai Tadasuki

After a speech from Satsuki, six giant pillars rose from the ground, those who claimed them will be the front-runners for this tournament arc.

In the matter of seconds, five of the six pillars were already claimed by none other than the Elite fours and, of course, myself. The last one was reserved for the transfer stu- Ah there she is.

"Lady Satsuki! We, the Elite Four, hereby propose a new rule for the Sudden Death Runoff Election!" Gamagoori shouted out of nowhere.

"We each wish to be allowed to face Ryuko Matoi in single combat" Sanageyama explained their proposal of which I didn't know anything about until now.

"If we're going to fight her anyway, this grand stage is the perfect place for it" Nonon added all smug.

"I believe it to be a fitting way to cap off the climax of the Naturals election"

"This should prove just as amusing, huh?" She looked at me directly.

"Indeed, Amusing" My approval.

An earthquake shook the whole school and a BIG structure appeared at the center of the Hexagonal shape that the pillar made.

### ***NATURALS ELECTION POLLING PLACE***

" ***A KING OF THE HILL FINAL BATTLE!*** Matoi! Battle the student council and emerge victorious! Do so, and I shall tell you the details of your father's death!"

"Say what?!" Matoi expressed herself towards Satsuki.

"Matoi! This is where I will face you in battle!" Gamagoori, with aid of his whips, jumps into the arena "I am Lady Satsuki's impenetrable shield! And this is where I am going to crush you"

"(Oy oy! Ira, isn't that too similar to what Sanageyama did? I should say nothing, he'll get it eventually... hm, perhaps that was her objective all along...)"

"I accept!" Matoi yelled as she transformed her Kamui and charged into the arena.

"What's this Froggy? You talk like you'll be the first to fight"

"I'll be the first to fight Matoi"

"Fine by me! I'll take you all on!" Matoi was as hasty as always.

"You really are a fool"

"What'd ya say four-eyes?!"

"We said Single Combat, didn't we?"

"Each of the elite Four wants to defeat your Kamui with his own power"

"The order has already been decided"

"So it was that..."

"Haven't you Elite four noticed that the pillars you stand are of different heights?"

"Tadasuki you little..." Inumuta was both angry yet calmed.

"The more students you defeated, the higher your pillar" Satsuki continued her explanation "Gamagoori defeated the fewest, so he is the first. The Inumuta, Followed by Jakuzure, then Sanageyama and finally, Tadasuki" Finally? she's looking forward to my fight, that makes me happy.

"Damn, I defeated too many of the cannon fodder" Sanageyama gave me a deadly glare with his... bandana eyes? He was both angry that he won't be the first one to fight and mad at me since I defeated more than him.

"That efficient fighting style of yours proved effective, I suppose" Inumuta also gave me a glare, probably waiting to see my reaction to being the last after what happened these last days.

"Well, well. The one who suggested this is the first one to fight, huh? You're not getting soft are ya Froggy?" Nonon teased.

"All I did was defend myself when they attacked me. Still, I suppose this means that you four won't get a chance"

"Personally I'm okay being the last one" I declared to everyone here.

"On the other hand, What the hell did you do when you went away to have that big of a body count, ?" Nonon asked what the other three also wanted to know.

"Tried to have a nice trip to the beach... needless to say it didn't quite felt like vacations"

"You're tellin' me all of it later, Kai!" Sanageyama shouted.

"HEY! Are y'all gonna fight?" Matoi got impatient.

"What are you in such a hurry for? The battle begins at 1pm" Gamagoori lectured Matoi.

"What's the difference between then and now?! Let's get this over with!" For once I agree with Matoi, but one must learn patience.

"No, we will abide by the schedule. That is what discipline is about! That is what the rules are about!" Does he have to be that damn loud all the time though?

About half an hour later the announcement of the broadcast of our battle was launched and heard through all of Honno City

We, The Elite Four, Myself and Satsuki, all rested in the meeting room atop Honno Tower.

"So you're telling us you got rid of the Bikers, the Manga AND the fishing club all by yourself!" Sanageyama and Nonon agreed for once in something, even though that something is being mad at me...

"Pretty much... ask Iori for details, I don't really wanna recall those events..."

"You madman... And I also heard you got a couple more on your way to the courtyard this morning?" Inumuta added to the recollection of data.

"Only like six, the ones from today were far too few to count"

"I trust you discipline them Tadasuki!" Gamagoori was fired up.

"At the very least they didn't show up here so I'd say I did a good job"

Iori stood silently by the side of Soroi.

"So, what will you all do until 1:00pm"

"I will just wait" Gamagoori, as disciplined as usual.

"I'll get some more data on Matoi" \*Mental sigh\* Inumuta and his data...

"And you, Sanageyama?" I asked.

"Me? I'll just meditate" A bit unusual from him.

"I'll have some snacks, be a sweetheart and pass me some Mr. Lizard"

"So you're all gonna slack?" My disappointment was visible.

"Call it: Mentally Preparing" Answered Inumuta.

"And what are you gonna do Mr. Lizard? Gonna check on all those broken hearts of yours near the No-star terraces?" She whispered the last part of that.

"You know what! I will! If I may, Lady Satsuki" I turned to Satsuki, asking permission to leave.

"You may Tadasuki, but try not to run into Matoi"

"Indeed, don't want to take the chance away from everyone here, Haha!"

The others were a bit stunned but we all laughed it off a second later and, although Satsuki's chair was facing the other way, I could feel like she laughed a bit as well.

From there I left through the elevator and when it arrived at the first level, the doors opened and Rei was waiting for me, I asked her to meet me here.

"Sir. Tadasuki!" She stood straight, then bowed.

"Now, now, we're alone. No need to be so formal"

"I..." she looked down and trembled a bit "I can't..."

"Rei! I know how brave you are and I trust you, Do you trust me?"

"Y-Yes!" Instant answer.

"Then trust me when I say that your face looks far prettier when you're smiling!"

"Ah..." She was stunned and got all red.

"Walk with me for a bit Rei"

"T-t-tadasuki Sir! P-please do not call me by my first name..."

"Are you sure you want that Kinkyū?"

"I-i-i" She took a deep breath "Not fair!"



"I order you Kinkyū, walk with me for a bit"

She wrapped her arms around my left arm and we walked away through the corridors of Honnouji Academy.

"So, what did you call me for today?" Her smile, in combination with her long pink hair I was almost too bright for me to handle, almost.

"I wanted you to deliver a message"

"Huh? Why me? I mean I will. But why?" She was confused but still smiling.

"Mainly because the receiver has no phone. And I don't really want to see her right now..."

"Her?" There she goes again...

"Call her my little sister if you must... She is the same girl that was with me on that... trip" Crap, she might call me out.

"Fine, I'll deliver it"

"Why thank you" What, no interrogation? Who are you and what did you do with the real Rei? just kidding, she stopped getting all jealous when she became a Two-star a couple of weeks after we separated.

"What's her name?" Ah, there she is...

"Scylla Shirogane and I consider her my little sister, give her this" I gave a small sealed envelope to Rei.

"Where'd you meet her?" She asked while stuffing the envelope in one of her many pockets.

"She was abandoned, I took her in and she needs to One: be less clingy and Two: less hot-headed"

"So you know her well..." I love how brave you are but sometimes you're too brave, Rei...

"Ah! Kai, just the man I was looking for" Shiro to the rescue.

"Iori, you need something?"

"We need to talk" He turned his face to Rei "In private..."

"Go Kinkyū" I ordered her to leave.

"At once Sir. Tadasuki" She bowed to both of us and left short after.

Once she was far away enough, we started.

"You fooled me enough... Amenonuhoko..."

"Good, I would've been offended if I got away with this one"

"What is it you actually came here?"

"To explain something me and Iori dug out, I asked him to let me relay this message to you personally"

"I'm running low on time, speak"

"First of all I'd like to make it clear that I'm not your ene-"

"That I know already, I just Really don't like how well you copy Shiro..."

"Very well, now for my skills: I can copy you Humans Perfectly, to the last memory and expression, though I have to wait a long time until I can change again..."

"I can see that..."

"But what is really important about that is, that girl in the purple Kamui and Izanagi are pretty similar"

"What the?" So they are fakes?!

"They are some sort of perfect replica, no the real ones, is quite intriguing if I say so myself"

"So they are like an entity made entirely of Undead Fibers Like you and Izanami?"

"More or less, I'm still trying to figure it out with the real Iori. Also speaking of which, where is Izanami?"

"I think she's 'Asleep' if it makes any sense to you"

"I see, indeed we Life Fib-sorry Undead Fibers, also need rest every once in a while, but what is more interesting of all is... **Ryuketsu** , you called it?"

"Long story short, is the same as Junketsu and Senketsu"

"Clever choice of name I must say"

"Uh... okay? Anyway, there is one last thing, Izanami is no longer equipped to my uniform, what the hell happened?"

"That will take some more time to explain properly but the short version is: she's part of you now"

"(Same thing Ryuketsu said...) Oh come on man! I'm feeling like it's puberty all over again and I don't like it..." I let out a sigh.

"Huh? I didn't quite thought of it like that, interesting..."

The 1:00pm bell sounded.

"I better get moving" I looked at the polling place at the center of the courtyard and when I tried to look for Amenonuhoko, he was already gone.

Everyone occupied their pillars, The crowd going wild at the bloodbath that was about to occur. I used the tail of my uniform to create a chair, I'm gonna stay here quite a while after all.

"Begin" Was all that Satsuki had to say for the stairs on Gamagoori and Matoi's pillars to appear so they could start.

If his opponent wasn't Matoi, Gamagoori would have it easy, but she doesn't give up easily and she Will find a way through his Goku uniform.

Matoi transformed.

"Consider that your final transformation, Matoi!" Gamagoori also transformed " ***Three-Star Goku Uniform: Shackle Regalia!***"  
(***Mitsuboshi Goku Seifuku: Shibari no Sō*** )

For a solid minute they just stared down at eachother.

"Do you want to fight or not?!" Gamagoori leaned down a bit and asked Matoi.

"Of course I do!"

"Then why aren't you attacking me?"

"You really are a fool, aren't cha?! I know that your uniform absorbs power of the attacks so you can use it against the attackers. I know I can't just attack you like that"

"I see. So you really are a fool! Do you think that I hadn't anticipated something so obvious?" Many of the tentacle thingies that covered Gamagoori started to lash out at himself. I still think that you went a bit too far with that one Ira...

"What the?" Matoi got hit back by the sudden growth of Gamagoori.

"Even if no one disciplines me, I discipline myself! I use my own techniques to punish myself! I punish and punish myself, and bring

myself to a climax. This is my ***Higi Jijo-Jibaku*** "

Did NOBODY taught him what any of that could mean in this context? I rolled my eyes, not at his determination, I will never do that, but his methods... those could use some improvements.

"What the fu!-" Matoi just stood there like a stump when Ira transformed yet again.

"Now let me show you! ***Three-Star Goku Uniform: Scourge Regalia!***" (***Mitsuboshi Goku Seifuku: Shibaki no Sō*** ) "

Make spiked whips lashing sporadically at everything around, the remaining three of the elite fours avoided them with ease. I just stood there, they did no damage and bounced off me like if they had hit steel.

Matoi just took leash after leash before falling and kept taking hits.

When she finally got some footing, all the whips sprang back to Gamagoori, hitting her a couple more times and he returned to his... mummified like state...

Gamagoori then explained a couple more rules to Matoi, and she then used her " ***Sen'i Sōshitsu!***"

Did no damage and Gamagoori grew again like a balloon. After a little explanation of why her attacks didn't work, Matoi kept attacking, triggering another Scourge Regalia and thus a storm of whips.

That won't do Matoi, you need to do better. She's doing great at blocking them though.

The fight continued as expected, Matoi attacking the mummified version and then Ira retaliating with the Scourge, with each time being more and more whips, even I had the need to avoid them occasionally as All other three Elites teased Matoi and/or praised Gamagoori.

I gotta give it to Gamagoori, I didn't quite take this for a chance to impress Satsuki, Now I'M getting fired up.

Matoi was bouncing between whips and lashes around the arena. Finally back on her feet she was Slashing away some of the tentacles and Gamagoori questioned her reasons to fight, of course she got angry at him but Gamaggori did not stop taunting her. His arrogance is a little higher than usual today, huh?

One whip landed dead in Matoi's face, launching her out of the arena.

"Looks like we might not get a chance after all, ain't that bad Mr. Lizard?" Nonon teased.

I didn't notice that I was frowning but Sanagayema 'saw' that I wasn't really worried at all and immediately switched his focus to the fight.

Nonon thought she struck a nerve as my face got more wrinkles because of my frown and Inumuta was just silently observing as he likes to do... most of the time.

Matoi managed to hold on at the last second, giving the audience a nice show...

Once Matoi got back up, Ira kept taunting her and it appears to be working as she just continued attacking.

Ira's attack became more and more aggressive when Matoi started to spin her Scissor Blade around to block everything he threw at her, but then he took out those frisbee things with spikes and the fight got seriously fast.

Out of nowhere, Matoi's blade bounced off her hands and was captured by Gamagoori's shackles. I think he called them that?

After which he made his arms into those creepy molds and started to crush Matoi inside them but she managed to escape them by

undoing her transformation, clever.

"Who would listen to a big pervert like you?" Ira ended up being the taunted one this time and attacked with 'The Ultimate Whip of Love...' For once I agree a bit with Matoi...

The gigantic rod made out of whips hit Matoi directly on her stomach, but what's this? She 's grabbing it. She has a plan.

The whips then returned to their original form wrapping Gamagoori on his entirely again and began to crush Matoi inside it.

"Arara. Is is over?"

"Pretty much" I answered Nonon's question.

"A shame, I wanted to gather more Kamui data"

"But not the way you all think..." I told them all.

Sanageyama's face turned from my direction to where the fight was and suddenly got started. "What is this I'm sensing?!"

"Gamagoori, that was foolish..." Satsuki spoke a bit disappointed.

A Lot of red spikes burst through Gamagoori's uniform, tearing the wrapped whips to shreds. Another Déjà vu, huh?

Ira jumped around in pain and fell to the ground, Matoi revealed herself from under the wraps, her Kamui had many spikes around it.

" **Senketsu Senjin!**" Bravo, Matoi!

"She turned her Kamui into a blade?!"

Very skillfully, Matoi did a backflip and grabbed her Scissor Blade

"YOU'RE LIFE FIBERS ARE EXPOSED! **Sen'i Sōshitsu!** "

The elite four were surprised at Gamagoori's defeat while I sat there calmly, as Ira's arrogance grew the winner of this match was revealed.

"Become obsessed with resolve, and even that will turn to arrogance. A Shame..."

### ***ROUND 1 VICTOR: RYUKO MATOI***

Under the mist I saw that Sastuki came down to talk with Gamagoori, I couldn't really tell what was happening though.

"That's one down, Kiryuin!" Matoi pointed her Blade towards the top of Honno Tower and thus to Satsuki

"I suppose that means... that I will be your next opponent, Matoi" Inumuta declared.

Matoi refused Satsuki's recommendation to rest between matches with what was basically a 'Let's get it over with'

"So impatient. Still, I hate to waste time too"

A/N: Sup yall, I know I said that i should upload more often but(t) ya know, shit happens :3 Please feel free of commenting what do you like bout the story so far, what problems you have (If any :P) that would help me greatly in writing more of da gud stuff.

-Charioth/Dragon86411



## Paint It Red

All of this reminded me of a time before we got these uniforms, the prototypes were ready and to test them we needed a worthy opponent, each other.

Therefore Satsuki arranged it so the five of us fought against one another. The first fight was Me VS Gamagoori.

The Prototype Shackle Regalia looked a lot like a tank standing up, barely any movement was possible on that thing, but it was durable.

On the other hand, the Prototype Onslaught Regalia was quite the opposite. A Glass Cannon, Iori described it.

"With this new uniform there is no way you can defeat me!  
Tadasuki!"

"Don't get too cocky yet, Irai! I also got a new set of clothes!"

"Begin!" with Satsuki smacking Bakuzan on the ground, my battle against Gamagoori Started.

While Gamagoori was impervious to any of my frontal attacks. There were openings on his Uniform, which I used alongside my boosted strength to defeat him.

"Damn you Tadasuki!" He complained while he aggressively took off the uniform.

"Back to the drawing board..." Iori spoke his mind.

"But wiser than before, Isn't it exciting Shiro?" Inumuta added.

"Bunch of nerds..." Sanageyama spoke what Jakuzure was thinking.

"In any case, since your uniform is still in one piece. Kai, you're still up" Iori ordered.

"Gotcha, who's next?" I prompted the next challenger, Sanageyama.

"Please allow me Lady Satsuki" Inumuta interrupted "I wish to start working on my own uniform as soon as possible" asking to be the next one.

"Allowed" Amused at his excitement, she obliged.

"Not fair..." Sanageyama was disheartened but also could not complain as openly as Iori, it was Lady Satsuki's direct command after all.

---

Looking around the No-Stars stands, Rei Kinkyū looked around for the addressee of the message she was entrusted with.

She didn't know if she could fully trust her, Scylla Shirogane. Her past was shrouded in more darkness than Tadasuki's but she did believe in Kai that she was an ally, thus Rei had nothing to fear, other than the contents of the letter she is meant to deliver.

"(Silver hair... silver hair... Where are you?)" Rei thought to herself as she surveyed for Scylla "Oh, there you are!" She found her, just by the side of another No-Star, Mako Mankanshoku, they both became quite popular as of late, Mankanshoku for her affiliation to Ryuko Matoi and Shirogane for the *couple* of students she beat these past days.

"Huh?" Scylla looked in her direction.

"Woah! Rei-Senpai!" Mako overreacted as always.

"Rei?!" Scylla got a bit startled.

"I've got a message from Tadasuki!" Rei announced to the pair of girls.

"From Kai?"

Rei got really angry all of the sudden, not without reason. But took a deep breath, calmed down and spoke.

"Do Not! Call him that here in Honnouji's Grounds..."

"Eh? Why?"

"Oh! I didn't tell you Scylla-chan?! :3"

"Uhh..."

"Basically, we No-Stars have no right to call the elites of Lady Satsuki by their name :3"

"B-but why? he seemed okay with it"

"OHMYGODDDD you two are already on first name base?! D:"

"It's not like that dammit!"

Rei was silent throughout their, really loud, discussion. When they both lowered their voices she took the letter out of her back pockets and gave it to Shirogane.

"Here, this is what he told me to give you..."

"A letter..." Scylla blushed a bit.

"Girl... pull yourself together... he's... he's not like that... I..."

They looked at eachother's eyes and the silver haired girl understood what Rei meant.

"O-Okay..."

Mako looked at both of them and

"No no no no! This is not how a rivalry between girls should go! First You gotta..."

Then she proceeded to do one of her acts moving around and trying to explain more nonsense. Before getting shut down by Gamagoori sitting down beside her and making the entire seat section tremble.

"Ah, G-Gamagoori-senpai! And you're half naked!"

"Don't be afraid, Mankanshoku. I am now a No-star like you"  
He looked at both of the girls by Mako's side "It's been a while Kinkyū and you're Shirogane if I'm not mistaken"

"Wait! You're a no-star! Does this mean that I get to order you around?!" Rei was excited.

"Don't get your hopes up Kinkyū! I'm still the Disciplinary Committee Chair!"

"Dammit..." Rei clicked her tongue.

"In any case why would you want anything for me, I believe you and Tadasuki are still acquaintances"

"Just a question that he refused to answer"

"Ask then and I'll see what I can do to answer. Though if it's something he couldn't answer do not be disappointed if the answer is the same!"

"Okay then... What's his favorite dish? I tried to find out but some time ago but achieved nothing"

"Favorite dish? No such thing. Tadasuki has no sense of taste"

"Ah" the three girls stood there like a stump before yelling at the same time "EEEEEEEEEEEEHHH?!"

---

And there's a group of very loud people on the spectator seats...

"My my, they're quite loud... and this big idiot doesn't move a muscle huh?" Inumuta watched the loud group from his device.

"I heard that, Inumuta..." I let him know.

"Apologies" One of his many half-assed apologies "In any case, time to hit the noise canceller... I'm not interested in hearing any of their gossip, even less now with Gamagoori yapping"

"You have doubts about Lady Satsuki?" Sanageyama said out of nowhere to Jakuzure.

"Honestly, ever since you lost your sight, that obnoxious intuition of yours has gotten even sharper, Mr. Wild Monkey"

"If you doubt her, it's your own footing that will become unsure"

"Hate to break it to you, but I have a different relationship to her than you tw- than the rest of you"

Their chat doesn't affect me. I'm more focused on how Inumuta will lose. Out of all of us he's the least experienced in battle and I'm sure Matoi has fought guys like him before. But I know he'll try hard.

---

"Kai Tadasuki VS Houka Inumuta, Begin!"

The original Probe Regalia had a pair of Spring Shoes, to get him away from danger as fast as possible while he gathered data.

My original uniform only had three weapons, a Longsword, a Rapier and the Claws, neither of them could get me in range of Inumuta's jumps. He was stalling since he wanted to uncover the flaws in my Onslaught Regalia.

I stood where last Inumuta had landed but now he was in the air, far from my reach. His jumps were getting annoying so I prepared one of my finishing moves. But I did not aim at him, I aimed at the ground.

Inumuta needed solid, even ground to land, I had made that conclusion while we fought and he avoided all rough terrain.

**" After the Lightning!" (INAZUMA NO ATO!)** At the sound of a thunder, the floor shattered, shooting rubble in all directions and leaving a crater where I stood.

Inumuta was panicking, that's when I knew my plan had succeeded.

He tried to land, but stumbled and shot himself forward in an awkward direction.

As he fell and rolled, he took the blackbox out of his back and held it tight so it would not get damaged. Him and his data...

I managed to grab him before he went too far and he admitted defeat.

"I never expected to win against you, but I did gather some precious data. For that I thank you, Tadasuki" Like nothing had happened, he cleaned his glasses and handed over the blackbox to Iori.

"It seems like that punch was too much for the Proto-Onslaught. Kai, please take it off so we can examine it properly" Iori asked.

"Oh come on!" Sanageyama, yet again, complained.

"Shut your trap and get ready Baka Saru!" Jakuzure is angry huh?

---

**" Mitsuboshi Goku Seifuku: Saguru no Sō " (Three-Star Goku Uniform: Probe Regalia)**

"Hey, Mr. Lizard!"

"Hm? What is it, Jakuzure?" I looked in her direction and she pointed to her own phone.

A message from Nonon arrived on my phone. " *You gonna do something about them?*"

" *Nope*" I answer the message.

" *Seriously? It looks like Froggie said something he shouldn't have*" That he did... I'm sure I'll be able to think about something later though.

Our conversation was cut short as a BIG eye that kept growing appeared on one corner of the arena followed by Matoi's voice.

"If I can't see where you are! I'll just have to attack Everywhere at the same time!"

"(Matoi never ceases to impress... hm, I wonder if Ryuketsu can do something similar)"

"Arara. It looks like the shock of that attack wrecked his hide-and-seek ability" Nonon as usual, rubbed it in.

"That's what happens when you rely on your eye-" Sanageyama added but was interrupted by Nonon.

"Just like a certain somebody!"

"My thoughts Exactly, Jakuzure"

Jakuzure let out a devilish giggle and Sanageyama clicked his tongue at both our comments.

Back to what's left of their fight. Inumuta de-transformed his Uniform and surrendered to save his precious data, to each its own I guess.

"I, HOUKA INUMUTA HEREBY FORFEITS THIS BATTLE!"

## **FORFEIT**

"Jakuzure. Prepare for battle" the words of the most beautiful- I mean, of Satsuki to ready the next encounter. Since Nonon's Uniform has quite a setup, not because it NEEDS it but She likes to show off.

For a bit her and Sanageyama yelled at each other, Uzu telling she will lose and that he needs to train a bit more so he doesn't give Me a chance later, we'll see about that last one...

Back at the No-Star stands, Inumuta found an empty seat, by the side of Gamagoori, alongside Mankashoku, Rei and Scylla.

While Rei and Scylla were off to the side gossiping, Mankashoku got trapped between the two defeated yelling at each other, does nobody have another method of venting out or what?!

Mankashoku separated them and started cheering herself, with a bigass flag and everything... she gets weirder and weirder every time I look her way...

Then there comes Nonon's entrance, as flashy as she could possibly make it.

With her entire marching band making their way to the arena and eventually transforming.

***"Mitsuboshi Goku Seifuku: Kanade no Sō - Gurāve" (Three-Star Goku Uniform: Symphony Regalia - Grave)***

The crowd, mainly guys, goes wild and cheers for Nonon.

Matoi complained about how was that big speaker a uniform, or so I assumed, Jakuzure was way too loud to make out any words from Matoi.

The transfer student, as Nonon calls her, transformed and lunged at Jakuzure. but was easily deflected by the sound attacks followed by her throwing sharpened notes like shurikens or something.



Rinse and repeat for a bit until she starts to make that big thing float, I for one did not know that it could do that, perhaps she hid that feature from me specifically? Yes, I can see her doing that.

**" *Kanade no Sō - Puresuto* " (*Symphony Regalia - Presto*)**

Before that I couldn't hear anything they were yelling at one another but this time I heard her, bet she did that on purpose as well.

"Yes indeed, this big thing is flying! That's my power! The other Elites neither Lizardhead here could ever do this!"

She then flew up as high as she could, over Honno tower, I believe she muttered something to Satsuki, but couldn't hear any of it though... I'm starting to get really annoyed by all this noise.

The barrage of attacks continued with Nonon on the sky, Matoi managed to block all of them until Jakzure used one of the big flute missiles. You outdid yourself with that one Shiro.

Matoi survived the impact. Her Senketsu is really resilient. The smoke cloud made it difficult to see what she was doing, but it became clear seconds later when she threw her Scissor blade at Nonon, it was attached to a string, presumably of Senketsu. And after it stuck to the big thing, The skirt spikes of the Kamui shot to the ground, to anchor Matoi while she pulled Nonon to the arena. Perhaps she learned that trick from me? Interesting.

Nonon struggles to get Matoi off her, the rope that holds her cannot be cut with anything she has, so the next logical step should be: The Floor.

As if someone had told her, Nonon fired a bunch of explosive notes at Matoi, with the real aim of destroying the Arena, so she would fall.

With Matoi falling from the arena, the match looked like it was over and for once I was impressed at the raw power Nonon had.

One final attack with A LOT of flute missiles. The expectators' seats were destroyed almost entirely, leaving the group surrounding Mankanshoku standing.

I could Feel Nonon's smugness all the way from where she was as she waited for the smoke to pass, is it really over? I thought to myself.

The smoke cloud moved fast, really fast. It is not over.

Matoi shot up from the remains of the arena.

**" *SENKETSU SHIPPU* "**

I can tell you right now, Nonon is Not going to be happy about that.

The battle continued in the sky, one explosion followed another one, until Matoi decided she could take advantage of her flying ability, and go straight for Satsuki.

As expected, she was stopped by a really angry Nonon and they both were on "floor" level once again but of course, the barrage of attacks only increased with Nonon emptying her arsenal and destroying even more stuff.

Another smoke cloud was raised by those reckless attacks and Matoi took the chance to grab one of Jakuzure's Flute Missiles and launch it back at her, destroying the Symphony Regalia vehicle.

Matoi, still in the air, kept attacking Nonon with the intention of using her Fiber Lost, and when she finally used it, something was off, for her I know full well what's going to happen next...

"Encore" The crowd yelled "Encore!" Louder each time "ENCORE!"

Nonon rose up from a platform in the arena with her ultimate form.

**" *Kanade no Sō - Da Kāpo ( Symphony Regalia Da Capo )* "**

Blasting Matoi with the pink noise laser, Matoi was against the ropes.

And after a Jakuzure getting mad at Uzu for cheering Matoi, real smooth Sanageyama... Nonon attacked again, Louder than before.

Matoi once again amazes everybody here.

She is just standing there, taking Nonon's attack. If Inumuta was here I bet he would explain it so in detail that I'll get bored of it. Tough luck.

**" *Senketsu Mubyōshi* "**

Then Matoi, somehow, repelled the sound attack, I think I heard Inumuta yell about how it was the same type of skill: Creating Soundwaves using Life Fibers but since Matoi's Senketsu is made One-Hundred Percent out of life fibers, is only natural that hers are stronger.

***ROUND 3 VICTOR: RYUKO MATOI***

Now the big fight is about to begin, the one which results is the most blurry out of them all.

***Uzu Sanageyama VS Ryuko Matoi***

Uzu rushed into the arena and when Satsuki said so the battle began.

---

**A couple of minutes earlier.**

"Eh... Kinkyū-Senpai?" Mako spoke a bit worried.

"What is it, Mankashoku?"

"Are you not gonna help any of these students? You're the leader of the Nursing Club after all..."

"Nope, while I am indeed the Nursing Club Leader, the club only really moves under orders, therefore I won't help them until any of these two jerks or the ones up there say I must" The two former Elite Four seated by their side didn't moved an inch while the destruccion happened, neither did Rei. The only ones that were somewhat worried were Scylla and Mankashoku, but the latter, after hearing Rei's excuse, stopped caring about it.

"You could've spared the 'jerks' part Kinkyū, but yeah, as long as we, or rather **She**, doesn't say anything we can't and won't help any of the no-stars"

"That's too cruel..." expressed Scylla.

"But beating the One-Stars extensively is allowed, Shirogane?" Inumuta said while showing an image of Scylla battling One-Stars on past days.

"I uh..."

"Changing the subject a little bit, what exactly did Tadasuki do to destroy the Fishing Club?" Inumuta started another interrogation.

"Oh yeah, I too wanna hear more, I barely noticed it but there was something BIG going on by the nearby shore. There was so much smoke I seriously though it was the aftermath of a war or something"

"I'm not so sure myself, I was nearby but it's difficult to describe"

"Try, this can prove highly beneficial to us all" Inumuta insisted while Gamagoori watched silently and Mako looked at the fight currently going on.

"Fine..." She gave in to the pressure.

Scylla told Inumuta about how the big boats arrived from some hidden position to ambush them.

"Curious, I don't remember any of us authorizing the use of those ships... continue"

The Silver haired girl followed the story with Tadasuki's plan and his rampage through the first ship, beating and launching One-Star Students left, right and center with only part of his whole uniform.

"What a show off..." They were talking for a while and, after a little pause for Jakuzure to join them and for Inumuta to, One: make her mad and Two: explain to her what they were talking about.

Then the part about Izanagi or Siegfried was detailed. Inumuta did not interrupt Scylla as he was focused on writing everything down.

Then as the part about Kai getting pierced by many spikes was due, Ryuko and Sanageyama, who were about to clash, a cute contestant dropped in between.

---

As they were about to clash, *something* appeared in the middle of them.

"(Monster... Rat... Tiger.... Blood...)" ?! Four words this time?!

It looks like a cute girl but I- We know what she really is.

As the memory of my first meeting with this "cute girl" dressed in pink an unnatural anger rose. No, I must keep it together.

"GET BACK, SANAGEYAMA!" Satsuki shouted, it's the first time I've seen her lose her cool and with good reason.

Confusion reigned in the arena as well as in all around Honnouji grounds.

"Why are you here? **Nui Harime** " Satsuki questioned it. I stood silently, suppressing the anger that tried to overtake me.

When the exchange of "Friendly Words" that felt like threats to each other ended. Sanageyama swung his bamboo sword at Nui.

She blocked it with her umbrella. God Damned Abomination...

Sanageyama struggled to get past the umbrella, as I did to stop the rising heat of Anger.

Quickly, Nui parried Sanageyama's attack, buried her pinky inside the Blade Regalia and tore a visibly red strand from it, making it fall into pieces soon before smacking Sanageyama out of the arena stark naked.

Confused expressions all over Honno City, I made my entrance full armored Slashing my claws at Nui. As expected, she blocked it the same way. But this time, we both struggled to retain posture.

"My my, Satsuki~ You should keep the lapdog on a leash~" She said playfully.

"And the purse poodle should not stray from its owner, Harime" I answered her completely seriously.

"Tadasuki?! When did he?" Matoi was surprised as she did not saw me appear behind Nui.

"I still prefer to play with the Kamui girl~ Now. Shoo shoo~"

My vision was tunneled, all I could see and hear was Nui and Matoi, that was until the sound of rock being destroyed reached my ears as background noise.

Neither of the two girls I was looking at was the responsible for that, therefore...

Nui's eyes looked to the side, she wasn't looking at Matoi, she was on the other side.

My vision got clearer and I could see a Silver Haired Girl in a Purple Uniform, charging at us, her Bloodshot eyes were nothing but fiery anger.

I took a glance back at Nui, her face was that of surprise but a second later, it became distorted in disgust.

"How can a girl so ugly even exist" I heard Nui whisper before disappearing from in front of me.

"NO! SHE IS STILL USEFUL!" I knew what Harime was going to do and I had to stop her.

Pushing the Onslaught Regalia into Overdrive I arrived in front of Scylla before Nui did, I could not stop her attack with any of my weapons, so I opted for the defensive option.

Summoning "Face," my Sword and Shield, I braced for Harime's strike.

"Oof" I felt the faint edge of a blade scrape my arm before I used the power of that hit and my own to jump away from it. She didn't use the umbrella, she had something else.

By the time I open my eyes I'm a couple of feet from hitting the actual ground face first. I do a flip and grab an unconscious Scylla on my arms before landing.

Rolling a good couple times before stopping and getting up, I notice a couple of things, One: I'm naked, go figure... Two: Nui is wielding an interesting weapon, The Half of a Giant Purple Scissor, Three: Matoi looks like she is about to lose it.

They speak for a bit before Matoi screams as loud as Nonon's music.

"BIIITCH!"

---

As Ryuko and Sanageyama were about to clash, someone dropped in the middle of them forcing them to stop out of surprise.

The pink girl in front of her, Nui Harime, was damn strong, and Senketsu knew it. She will be a tough foe.

"My my, Lady Satsuki~ You should keep the lapdog on a leash~"  
She said playfully.

"And the purse poodle should not stray from its owner, Harime"  
Tadasuki answered her completely seriously.

"Tadasuki?! When did he?" Matoi was surprised, Tadasuki appeared in an instant behind this girl, already with his claws out.

S: ("What's with this immense pressure?! Is nothing like our last encounters with him!")

"I still prefer to play with the Kamui girl~ Now shoo shoo~"

S: ("I don't like any of this, Ryuko! Could we retreat?")

"As if, we're this close to getting somewhere" Ryuko whispered to Senketsu.

With Tadasuki and this Nui girl Stuck in a struggle, Ryuko saw Scylla, her most recent friend, jump onto the arena with fire in her eyes, and not the good kind, it was one fueled by hate and anger.

"How can a girl so ugly even exist" Ryuko heard Nui whisper and felt a chill down her spine.

"NO! SHE IS STILL USEFUL!" Tadasuki's yelled.

Followed by Nui disappearing, Tadasuki now flying down and Scylla is nowhere to be seen.

"Damned Lapdog..." Nui spoke lightly to herself with an angry expression that quickly turned to the "Normal" playful one.



"Hey hey! What's all thi-" Ryuko saw what Nui used to attack Tadasuki. "Th-that is..."

"Yep, the other Half of your Scissor Blade! I pulled this out of your dad and I had a whole bit prepared... that *Rat* in a tutu really threw me off though..."

Ryuko just stood there, building up her anger as memories of her dad's last moments flowed into her mind.

"BIIITCH!"

Ryuko attacked Nui endlessly and asked many questions in between. To which all the pink girl answered very mysteriously and with the scary smile she had since she appeared.

But Ryuko did listen to the reason why Nui killed him, her dad, for "meddling in things no human should"

Nui did a little skip and caressed Senketsu, like if Ryuko was being dragged away from where she was, she ended a couple of feet away from Nui.

S: ("Aaaaargh! What's with this woman's hands? They're as cold as ice!")

That's when everyone noticed that Nui had yet another Bright Red strand connected to Senketsu on her hand, which she pulled.

Senketsu twisted and turned, like he was in incredible pain but returned to normal soon after.

Matoi continued her barrage of angry attacks.

S: "Stop it, Ryuko! It's dangerous for your blood to get this hot! If you keep this up I won't be able to hold myself together!"

And out of nowhere, a stream of blood followed by a big maw that resembled Senketsu stood in front of Ryuko, and bit her.

Blood rained on the arena and a wall of steam shrouded Ryuko as Nui laughed.

The steam lifted to reveal. A Monster, she had fused with her Kamui and the Scissor Blade.

---

"(I hope that doesn't happen to me...)"

"Damn! Is that what you were after, Nui Harime? I'm going down!" Satsuki announced her next move as Matoi jumped to punch Nui, missing but absolutely destroying the arena.

Iori tossed me a steel wardrobe, containing a track suit, It's nowhere near as good as Onslaught was but that one was gone.

I put it on as I hear Inumuta's voice through a device on the uniform.

"It's no good"

"Arara! You're alive, Baka Tokage"

"Spare me your smugness Nonon, what's happening to Matoi?"

"She's completely out of control"

"No shit sherlock. Could it be that she's been swallowed by the power of the Kamui?"

"In any case, Matoi's body can't handle this for long. She'll probably die of blood loss in minutes"

"Blood Loss?! We have to give her an ablution!" The voice of Mako.

"You mean transfusion"

"Is Mankanshoku still with you?"

"More or less, what happened to Shirogane? She just left as soon as that Nui showed up" Inumuta asked.

"Don't know, she's out cold now, Re-Kinkyū you there?"

"Yes!"

"Evacuate the school and get everyone to safety! You three-" Rei answered with a 'will do' left immediately after.

From the device, I could hear Mankanshoku run off yelling something about blood loss and blood stealing at the same time that Sanageyama showed up.

"Things have taken a disturbing turn, I see"

"You four! To Lady Satsuki!" I order them before I run off to meet Rei.

"Ara, you're also not dead Mr. Wild Monkey?" I could still hear them speaking from the device.

"Thanks to you, I got plenty of data on the Banshi"

"Until I settle things with Matoi and Kai I will not die"

"Sanageyama... put on some clothes" Ira said.

The battle between Nui and the Berserk Matoi continued as Ryuko shot blood everywhere.

Back in actual ground, Satsuki had just stepped down from the stairs and the Elite four got by her side, I joined them moments later.

"The destruction of the polling place can no longer be avoided. I want you five to evacuate the students" As expected from her, orders first thing.

"I had no idea a Kamui had this kind of power..." Nonon expressed her distress.

"I will stop her" Satsuki declared and flicked the thingy on her shoulder to transform Junketsu.

Dammit! If I hadn't lost the Onslaught or if I knew how to trigger Ryuketsu I could be of greater help... I'll have to stick to what I can do for now...

" ***Life Fiber Override, Kamui Junketsu!*** You handle this!" She left, entrusting us the safety of Honnouji.

"Yes!" All five of us complied and left as fast as we could.

"You should stop staring at her while she wears that Mr. Lizard, it's creepy"

"I can certainly try, Nonon" Me and Jakuzure stood by one of the emergency exits, the other exits were being managed by Rei and the rest of the elites.

"You've completely fallen for her, huh?"

"From the moment she showed up all the way back, and you managed to discover it by yourself, I'm sure no one else knows, apart from Scylla and maybe Rei..."

"You still call them by their name. God! You're hopeless" None of the students were paying attention to us, they were quite focused on running away from the school. "You keep your promise and I'll keep mine"

"Why this all of the sudden? Never took you for the schemmer one" That last part was sarcasm. She mentioned the promise I made about a year ago to her so that she won't rat me out to the rest of the gang.

"Seeing as you still accepted Hakodate and you seem to have something planned with the Silver Girl you brought, I'm just making sure you remember it, Baka Tokage"

"There is a time and a place for my answer, and it's neither here nor now"

"I knew you were hiding something, just like how lori hid whatever happened to you the day before yesterday"

" **She** was the one who told me to keep that a secret, I won't say anything else"

"Fine, I won't ask you anything else, though if that's the case you should tell the Silver Girl that she don't say anything either, she was about to spill the beans just before she like, went berserk and rushed to the arena and who the fuck is that pink girl? You looked like you knew each other. Spit it Tadasuki!" Oh boy she's getting mad.

"When all this is get sorted out I'm sure she'll tell us who Nui is exactly"

"Bullshit, you just dodging me!"

"Nah, I knew who she was cuz I've met her before but that's about it. I'll tell you how it all went down later"

"Wait, was it that trip you two took to meet with Mama Ragyo"

"\*sigh\* Yep"

"The one you came back from all bloody and shit?"

"... Yup"

"I think I can piece it together from there..."

While our chat took place, explosions filled the courtyard with rubble... and I'M gonna be the one to fill all that paperwork.  
FUUUUUUCK.

"Huh? Who's that?"

I see a blue car make its way *into* the courtyard, now we can't have that... is that... Mankanshoku... goddammit.

"I'll be back, Jakuzure" facepalming and somewhat angry.

"Just make sure you're back! We're not done talking!" She yelled at me as I made my way towards Mankanshoku

"Ah, Vice-prez!" Mako shouted "Is Scylla-chan okay"

"Uh, yes she is..." A bit confused by her first reaction, I shook my head and asked "what are you all doing here?"

After a "Thank goodness she's okay" from Mankashoku her family spoke one by one.

"Oh, we drove here 'cause we wanted to watch Ryuko's fight in person!" The father said.

"Don't suppose we can sneak in now..." The young boy on the back of the small truck whispered.

"Where is the arena?" The mother, also on the back of the truck asked.

"There is no time to be joking around! This is a job for Mankashoku, back-alley doctor!"

"Bold of you to say any of that in front of me Mako Mankanshoku, what is it you're planning?"

Finally Satsuki and Matoi clashed, making the entire school rumble.

"I'm planning to save Ryuko's blood! It's very valuable! And she could die if she lose it all!"

"I bet she would..."

"If you excuse me Vice-Prez we have to go and save Ryuko!"

"I don't quite get it but Ryuko is in danger so hop on, Mako!" The father in the driver seat told his daughter and quickly got in the back as well. "Let's Go!"

"Yeah!" the ones in the back were excited, but the car didn't turn on.

As they realized what happened to the car the battle between Satsuki and Matoi was getting ridiculous, the pillars that fell because of an explosion were now sticking out of the walls of Honnouji... that's gonna take a looooooot of work to repair...

"Now, You sure you wanna stay here?" I said pointing at the pillar above us.

"Now that I think about it..." said the father.

"Dad! We have to save Ryuko's Blood!"

"Without the car that'll be impossible, Mako!"

"No, I won't give up on Ryuko!" And she ran off "OH I GOT AN IDEA!" She did a full One-eighty and was back as fast as she left.

"When did you get back, Mankanshoku?!" I barely noticed her when she returned, this girl only gets weirder.

"Toss me"

"Say what"

"Toss me Vice-Prez! Toss me! That way I can get to Ryuko in time!"

"let's say you do, what then?"

"I'll make her go back to normal, she would never hurt a friend!"

I gave it some thought, but it was difficult to deny her determination.

"fine, but if something happens to you I'm not responsible for it, got it?"

"Got it!" Mako said so. But the rest of the family seemed a bit disappointed, what a strange family you got yourself Matoi.

"I can't believe I'm doing this..."

As we both got in position, a blue and a red glow were visible in the middle of honnouji together with an immense pressure. It must be Matoi and Satsuki charging up for something.

"Ready Mako?!"

"Yes!" I took one last look to her face, full of determination that and/or she was just dumb. Either way she was doing something suicidal for a friend...

I took Mankanshoku in one of my hands, she stayed immobile posing like a dart with her hands pointing forward. Took a running start and tossed her in the general direction of the flash of lights.

When both of the battling women were ready, they lunged at each other, and somehow, made a shiny black wave that engulfed the battlefield.

For a second I could not believe what I was seeing, that became a couple of minutes as Mankashoku was swimming in that black shiny wave yelling Ryuko over and over again. She does love her friends, huh?

"Don't do this Ryuko! This isn't like you Ryuko!"

Nui was about to run in to get Mako but was stopped by Satsuki

"Hold Your tongue and watch" She said to Nui, stopping her with Bakuzan.



Mako held on to Berserk Matoi for dear life, I could see all the way from here that she was getting burned, that probably won't stop her either.

"You didn't want to avenge your father, you wanted to know him better. When I was drunk on power you were the one who brought me to my senses, now it's my turn!" She did a weird thing with her hands and a light appeared out of literal nowhere to spotlight her "I'm gonna bring Ryuko back!" She yelled as she slapped Berserk Matoi in the face,

And she slapped her again... and again, and again... Gods, she ain't stopping...

One last slap, had some steam come out of Matoi's body as he slowly got back to her "normal" uniform. She did it.

Mako slapped Matoi again... and again... it doesn't look like she's gonna stop... with tears in her eyes Mankashoku fell on top of Matoi, It seems like it's over.

I took this canche to make my way to Satsuki.

"Aw, the ending turned out to be a real letdown~"

"Nui harime. You are hereby banned from Honnouji Academy"

"And I could not agree more"

"I will deal with both Ryuko Matoi and the Kamui. Meddle in my affairs again, and Grand Couturier or no, I will show you no mercy. Leave" That's the Satsuki I love.

"Fine, fine, you've made your point!"

"Tadasuki, this way"

"At once Lady Satsuki" She asked me to follow her to Honno tower. Passing by Nui's side, we exchanged deadly glares and got on our

way.

Walking up the stairs, she transformed back into the not so revealing Junketsu.

"So that's what she's like..."

"Nui Harime is quite problematic, but she does listen to me. She will stay away from Honnouji grounds"

"If she doesn't, I ask permission to engage"

"Even if you had your uniform or Ryuketsu for that matter I would have still declined that"

"Wh- Oh I get it, We're mobilizing"

"Indeed" The doors to the Elite Four meeting room opened, she sat on her chair and got a cup of tea from Soroi. "It is all ready, with today's result we'll become stronger and we will take control of what's rest of the country"

"I see..."

"Hmm, I expected you to be more excited about it"

"I am, but I have this strange feeling... You already knew Nui killed Matoi's father, right?"

She took a deep breath "I did"

"Is just. It feels weird every time I discover something you hide from me. Naturally, I do not blame you for it and I will never do so. The others will just accept whatever you tell them. But I... is just... agh, I'm not sure"

She turned around on her chair.

"I understand. Please leave, there is a lot of work to be done"

"Yes..." Bowing and unsure if she actually understood what I wanted to say, as I myself certainly did not, I left the room and took the big stairs down.

---

With just a "Yes" Kai left the meeting room, leaving Satsuki with her butler.

"Milady" Soroi got closer to offer a refill to his mistress. But something was strange, her cup was still half-full. He didn't mistime it, she usually drinks the whole cup by now, unless... "Is there something troubling you Milady?"

Satsuki just realized that Soroi got close to refill her cup and gave it back to him. Herself not realizing it was still half-empty.

"I'm fine Soroi..."

"If I may, is it about what Master Kai just said?"

"It! It is..." She was slightly startled by the insistence of her butler. "Why does his doubt feel so... so..."

"I do not think it was doubt, Milady"

Visibly confused, Satsuki spoke.

"Explain Soroi..."

"Yes. In the time I have served the Kiryuin. I can say for sure, Master Kai places no doubts in Milady, he believes in you more than anyone In Honno City or in the whole Earth I dare say. Him being your second in command yet knowing little in comparison to yourself. What he said just now was him being honest and showing how he feels about that matter"

"I see..."

Kai was confused, not doubtful. Soroi knew this and now so did his mistress.

"There's more, if you allow me"

"Continue"

"Yes! In addition to that I also believe he is surprised"

"Surprised?"

"Indeed, like if the canvas he was watching had suddenly become bigger" He remembered the analogy Kai used to refer to Satsuki when Soroi questioned him about his feelings.

"Anything else, Soroi?" She was amused.

"I do not think so, Milady" He answered, extending a new cup of tea to his mistress.

"Thanks" She finished that cup in record time, she drinks faster when she is happy.

A/N: thank for reading, as usual, there will be an intermission on Wattpad, showing yall some images that i think you might wanna see:3 (I would leave a link to ti IF FFN WOULD LET ME)

## Coated In Gold

Once upon a time, there was a Mighty Golden Dragon, who ruled over a town of piggies. The Dragon had once before freed the piggies' town from a Nasty, Cloud Devouring Demon. The piggies praised the dragon as their savior. That was, sadly, short lived.

While the Dragon treated the piggies way better than the Demon ever did, the Dragon didn't keep the town just out of the goodness of its heart, but out of convenience.

It took residence in a cave at the base of a mountain, the largest one in the vicinity and there it delved for a long time, demanding tribute from the piggies in all: knowledge, coin, and flesh.

It was never ridiculously unfair for the piggies, for they have since been able to prosper. But they could never shake off the hatred from the Dragon's gaze. It had never once looked upon them as individuals, maybe as nuisances some of the piggies thought, yet the answer is still fleeing to this day.

A particularly cold day in the middle of summer, the Dragon sat by its mountain of gold, when a beaten down piggy ran into the cavern. "Oh Mighty Dragon, we have intruders in the town!" screamed the piggy.

"I know" Said the dragon. As it got up and made its way towards the exit, the piggy was launched to god-knows-where by the dragon's tail.

Flying over town, the Dragon now had a good view of the enemy.

Five creatures stood in the way of its peace at the cavern:

A Giant Yellow Toad

A Blue Dog, hiding its mouth with a scarf.

A Pink Snake, holding the skeleton of a monkey.

A Green Monkey, wielding a sword.

And in front of them, as their commander, a pale lion. No, it doesn't have a mane, therefore it is a female.

Tales had the Dragon heard of this Lioness, not only was her strength unmatched but she also brought the winter with her.

A tough opponent, alongside many others, at the time lesser thoughts, passed through the Dragon's head.

Finally on the ground in front of her, the Dragon could appreciate more of the Lioness.

Her deep blue eyes like the ocean itself, hide pale as the clouds, teeths and claws as dark and treacherous as the night.

The Lioness demanded surrender, of course, the Dragon did not obliged. Instead, it opted for showing its own teeths and claws, a sickly yet interesting bronze glow they had.

Frowning at the Dragon's response, the Lioness roared. The area around became as cold as the harshest winter they had lived and the peeping pigs were sent flying by the storming winds.

This was the Dragon's weakness, cold.

Could it have been pride, stubbornness or merely instinct but the Dragon refused to yield.

Another roar and the Dragon itself started to freeze and if it's feet hadn't been stuck to the ground by the ice, it would have been blown away.

Once again the Dragon did not yield, yet it had no strength left to fight. Was this foe unbeatable for it?

Inconceivable! The Dragon put all that was left of its power on it's teeth, only one decent hit he had left in it.

The Lioness noticed the Dragon's strength, for all other foes had fallen considerably easier. Thus the Lioness stepped forward, freezing more and more the area around with every step.

But now, she was at range of the Dragon's final attack.

In the blink of an eye, both made their attack and as fast as it started it was over.

And The Golden Dragon, Fell.

Dismissing the Dragon and walking away victorious, the Lioness shone with an unnatural yet familiar light.

Entranced by this mysterious glow. What was it, the Dragon wanted to know.

Little by little, the ice it was trapped in cracked, but it did not break. Countless times the dragon tried to break off but was meaningless.

It thought it's chance of catching up to the Lioness was gone, until another roar was heard, like an order or encouragement, it could not really tell.

But what it could tell was that it filled it's inside with energy. Violently breaking out of the prison it was in, the Dragon sent ice flying in all directions but there was something different, itself, it was no longer golden but bright greenish-blue scales that did not shine in the presence of the unnatural light the Lioness emanated.

The shedding of skin was not at all unwelcome, the Dragon had been wanting to change its color as a way to leave the past behind. But that is not the important part.

Tumbling and breathing heavily the Dragon now stood upright, as if nothing had happened. It's vision became unblurred and air finally

reached it's head.

Just to be blinded again by the mesmerizing light and sight of the much smaller yet stronger than itself Lioness. And it could not take it's eyes off her.

With this show of determination, the Dragon joined the Lioness crew. Living crazy, and violent, adventures with all of them while growing stronger and stronger every day.

Also getting to know a Yellow Shark that believed to be a dolphin and a Purple Hummingbird that could sing, fight and heal at the same time.

Some time later, a Red-striped Dark Blue tiger entered the picture and the plan of the Lioness was set in motion.

But that was not all, the dragon also met someone else: A Silver Serpent that took many forms and, just like the Lioness light, had a familiar feel to it that the Dragon simply Had to know it's origin.

/-

A/N

Hey yall! I hope yall are doing great!

I wanted to thank u all for 3.9k reads! im really happy for archiving big numbers like this :D

I might have just taken some time on the holidays. Yall know how it its :P but(t) now im back

Did yall like this type of thing? more fairy tale like? i thought it'll be fun to post this lil update alongside it :3 and maybe ill do it again in the future.

Im not gonna promise a release date or schedule cuz ill break it on the spot, soooo yup! i might update some ch every now and then or



upload new ch twice in a godamn day, i know a much as you do :P  
do not worry, ive tried to have a schedule before and it sucked, so  
now i do what works for me.

Please remember to vote and comment, i cant promise ill read all  
comments, but i can tell u that i wont read em if u dont post em :P

Quick instagram selfpromo: dragon86411/

And thatll be that for this update and hope yall keep liking this fanfic  
as much as i enjoy making it if u excuse me i shall go back to playi-i  
mean, writing :P

-Dragon86411

# Fleeting

"(I want him. I WANT him. I WANT HIM!)"

But what about the Shark? What about the Hummingbird?

"(They don't matter! I want Him!)"

What about the Tiger? What about the Bunny?

"(They will not get in my way!)"

What about the Vermin?

"(I'LL GET RID OF IT)"

What

about

the

Lioness?

"..."

/-

The same night as Nui's intrusion.

I sat on my desk in my room, facing the literal wall of papers to review to fix all the damage and the arrangements for the raid trip... This is going to be a long week...

"Let's see..." Looking through the documents by pure instinct, I started to review my routine for tomorrow. There are things that need to be done at once.

"First: I'll go to Mankanshoku's house to pick Scylla up and take her up here to help me with all this. Assuming I don't get stopped in the way by... Matoi or Rei... I should be good to join the others at the meeting room early enough"

"Hard at work, huh?" The voice of Shiro coming down from the broken doorway.

"If I wasn't, the both of us would have been out of here by now" I said without looking at him.

"I'm off to get some sleep Kai, these days are not gonna get shorter for any of us"

"Surely you didn't come all this way just to say goodnight"

"Indeed, there are some matters that need both: Attention And Discretion" I stopped signing the documents to pay close attention to Shiro.

"Speak then"

"There has been some changes on Shirogane"

"I had noticed something but wasn't sure, what is it exactly?"

"She's human"

"... Say that again?"

"What I mean is: She is not a Revenant anymore"

"How?"

"I'm the one that should ask that. She was back to ' *Normal*' once you two got back. It has to be with something you did when you were away"

"Hmm..." I went through my memories to see if I could find something related but "nothi- wait!"

"You actually got an idea?!"

"Maybe it was ' *that night* ' ?"

" *That night* you say? Hmm... I'll remember that when we have more time to discuss it, it's getting late for both"

"You might be right, but there is a slight problem with that"

I pointed at the pile of rubble that should be my bed.

"Just sleep in the meeting room, Jakuzure made sure that the couch there was really comfy"

"So you're telling me that you have just randomly fallen asleep there once?"

"Maybe twice... or thrice. Point being: you should go, Lady Satsuki is also waiting"

"And that wasn't a priority because?!"

"Maybe you forgot, but Fake me didn't. He... They told me about how you got the Izanami and what happened after. So if had told you that first, you would have just storm off and Shirogane's condition would have gone under the radar for you"

"I-uh... fair enough... and what does the Real Iori have to say about that matter?"

"Pretty much the same they said, but allow me to say something else: If anything, I'm glad it was **You** who somehow saw something on her" I was about to interrupt him but He raised his hand, stopping me "To me as well as to Jakuzure she is more like family and I consider her something like my Older Sister. \*sigh\* We all are here for a reason, mine is to protect my family, that is why I work so hard,

Specially on the uniforms. Even if you guys are jerks from time to time"

"Quite sweet of you Shiro, Thank You" He turned around, probably a bit flustered at me smiling.

"Get going already! And when you have time go meet me at the Lab, there are some adjustments that I want to make to the Onslaught MK. II"

And thus he left without saying another word nor looking at me.

I: "(So, are we going?)"

"Took you long enough, I was starting to feel a bit lonely..."

T: "(I did hold her back during your time with your princess)"

I: "(YOU WHAT!)"

"Hoo boy this is gonna be fun..."

On my way to the meeting room I questioned them both.

"Izanami, If you were sewn into my uniform and it's now destroyed, where exactly are you now?"

I: "(Bet you figure it out by now, but to put it simple: I'm literally in your Right Arm, before it was something superficial but now's the real thing Haha!)"

T: "(Her carelessness is almost refreshing I must say)"

"Not my cup of tea, In any case, how did you get inside of me?"

I: "(Wasn't difficult with Tiamat already around, although it does feel weird)"

"What feels weird?"

I & T: "You see, the hosts of Life Fibers Bundles have practically always been Females. Is rare to even see one male host" Their voices, one childish and the other quite mature in contrast, sound ominous together.

"I'm... not sure how to take that..."

T: "(Doesn't matter really, what does though is that we can wear you and that gives us all enormous strength)"

I: "(Hey, his meeting with his girl is also important!)"

T: "(So is that Silver Child according to you and your mischiefs...)"

"Please hold her down while I talk with Satsuki..."

T: "(Done deal)"

I: "(HEY!)"

The elevator doors open, I have arrived at the dimly lit meeting room and in her chair, overseeing the moonlit Honnouji Grounds there she was, Satsuki Kiryuin.

/-

Kai stood at the entrance of the elevator, his gaze was one that she was far too familiar with: Lovestruck. This has, ever since the first time, made Satsuki smile both on the inside and on the outside, sometimes just the former due to keeping appearances as they have.

But there was stuff she needed to ask and to know.

"Kai"

"Satsuki" Maybe a second of delay he had on his response.

"We need to talk..."

"Yes..." He flinched a bit, why? "Is it about Shirogane?" He called her by her last name...

Satsuki took a deep breath "Indeed, her introduction as your secretary will be tomorrow"

"Yes! First thing in the morning I'll go get her personally from Mankashoku's house and bring her here for that!"

"Matoi is sure to welcome you..."

"She will ask questions first and, with Shirogane there, she'll think twice before starting a fight"

"An excellent deduction, your mission to keep her close is going splendidly. I trust your judgement on how to deal with all three of those girls"

"Thank You Lady Satsuki!" The mood got tense all of the sudden as they both realized that this had turned to a talk about their job when clearly, neither of them had the need to say Any of this to each other.

In her mind, Satsuki heard a menacing growl from beyond her chambers and Kai was somehow looking in the same direction.

"Satsuki..." Kai took a deep breath.

Her silence was a sign of acknowledgement, he knew this.

"I'm unsure of what's going to happen" His eyes now look to a place far beyond the courtyard.

Genuinely confused by him, Satsuki asked, "What will happen?"

"I will not lie" He told himself before looking at Satsuki with a serious expression

"I feel a web of darkness, slowly building itself as the plan advances and-"

There was more to what Kai wanted to say, whatever it was it didn't matter, Satsuki reacted fast and shortened the gap between them in fractions of a second, hugging the man that stole her heart.

When the Raging Winter becomes the Gentle Breeze of Spring and the Storm at Sea washes ashore as the perfect Waves, She wants everyone, specially him, to be there.

"Then we will tear it to shreds, together. Understood?!"

"Yes... yes..." His voice was weak but it sounded at peace as he returned the hug that continued for a couple of minutes but felt like mere moments "And once it's over, we'll- we'll..."

"(Say it, please...)"

He sighed and "We need to get some sleep" he said as he took a step back all the while not taking his eyes off Satsuki's for a moment.

She didn't blame him for not saying it, for she also didn't say it herself.

Eyes locked with each other, they slowly let their hands go but unconsciously grabbed the other's right hand right at the last second.

Noticing this, they both now let go, for good this time.

"Good Night, Satsuki..."

"Good Night, Kai..."

The door to her chambers closed, she walked directly into her bedroom and dropped on the bed. Falling asleep immediately and completely ignoring Soroi, who waited just outside.

/-

The door closed behind Satsuki and I flopped onto the big couch in the center of the room.



I: "(Now THAT'S what I'm talking about!)"

"\*sigh\*"

T: "(Did all I could)"

I: "(Hey! I thought we would be more cool with each other considering we're like, fused together now!)"

T: "(I'm only following my *Duties* and so should you)"

I: "(Well yeah, but what's life without *Desire* ?)"

An uncomfortable silence came after, they expected me to say something but I was nowhere near them right now and, after staring for a while into the infinite, I also fell asleep quite quickly.

That night I dreamt of being stuck under a storm in a fishing boat, dark clouds as far as the eyes could see made it seem like it was the middle of the night. The winds were *Scorching Hot* but the waters were *Freezing Cold* . It all seemed like it was the end of everything when in the distance, a ray of sunlight.

Taking the helm and steering the ship in it's direction I could do nothing but hope that it was salvation and, not before fighting against massive waves as the wind burned my face slightly, I reached it, the Eye of the Storm. Calm waters and a gentle breeze made my struggle as worth it as it was humanly possible, and it felt good.

I woke up at 7:00 AM, took the usual nutrient bar and made my way to the no-stars slums.

I: "(Finally! You're paying attention)"

T: "(Not that there was much you could do about it)"

Alone going down the Cableway I took yet another chance to ask the two parasites that now inhabited my body.

"You two, have no idea who Mari is yet?"

I: "(Nope, only that this person is looking for me for some reason)"

T: "(Nothing here either, I know barely more than you do, Kai)"

"Fine, then what's your opinion of Scylla?"

I: "(She's cute! you should give her a chance)"

"Not happening"

T: "(Her situation is most intriguing, as for her personality, she is quite green when compared to the average around here)"

"I see... to the next topic then, what do you think about Siegfried?"

I: "(I for one doubt he'll get up after what we did to him last time! Hehe!)"

T: "(\*sigh\* If only we were all that carefree, I'm sure he'll be back. I do not know how but I can assure you, he will)"

"Hmm" I stood at the door waiting for it to open while I considered Tiamat's approach.

I: "(Hey, I can feel you ignoring me y'know!)"

T: "(I'm sure he has his reasons)"

"One last thing before we get off this thing, I'm gonna ask you two to stay silent most of the time I'm with people, ok?"

I: "(\*sigh\* Yessir...)"

T: "(Understandable)"

Good

/-

The morning at Mankanshoku's home was lively, even more so now with two extra members instead of just one.

At the table were only the three girls, everyone else was out 'looking' for pieces to repair the car.

"Whoa! This is really yummy!" Scylla said.

"Yup! My mum's croquettes are the best in the world :D"

Ryuko ate slower than usual, and many questions passed through her mind. What's with Scylla's Kamui? Has she been a spy all along?

What's up with her in general, she has nothing to her name, only some weird ass uniform... Just like Ryuko herself.

"Something's wrong Ryuko? :c" Mako got close to Ryuko.

"It's alright Mako" And she simply put a croquette on Mako's mouth and patted her head, then Mako went straight to eating again.

"So, what are you gonna do while the school is being repaired, Ryuko?" Scylla was waiting for her time to ask.

"Not sure, I wanted to talk to Kiryuin and friends but now it feels like there will be no chance"

"Maybe if we go asking around we might find out where they are! :D"

"Is okay Mako, I can wait them out for now..." Senketsu was hung up on the bedroom as Ryuko felt weird from her recent outburst.

Scylla seemed to blackout and doesn't remember Ryuko going berserk, and she asked Mako not to say anything to her.

"So Scylla-chan, what did that letter say? :o" Mako couldn't contain her curiosity any longer.

"It was some sort of schedule..." She sighed, disappointed.

"How unromantic of the Vice-Prez, Hm! :C"

"Ain't that right" Ryuko said as both of her friends realized something was Definitely wrong and after a couple of seconds.

\*Knock\* \*Knock\*

"Oh? Who might that be? :3" Mako got up and went to answer the door.

Ryuko also got her guard slightly up while Scylla just kept eating.

"Kinkyū-Senpai?! :O"

"Huh?! Kinkyū?!"

Both Ryuko and Scylla ran towards the front door.

"Woah there!" Rei jumped surprised at the girls suddenly appearing out of nowhere.

"What are you doing here? :o" Mako asked the sudden visitor.

"Wanted to talk more with little Scylla in private, but oh well!"

"Awfully well hidden, no?" Ryuko said with sarcasm.

"I was planning on talking more at school, but you see how things went"

"So? What is it?" The silver haired girl asked, surprisingly aggressive.

But Rei was unfazed. "Well, the first thing I wanted to discuss was Hako, I had a little chat with her and she wanted to know you"

"Hako?" The three girls looked confused.

"Oh! my bad. Hakodate, She wants to meet you personally" Rei corrected herself and giggled a bit. "Also, I don't think we've had the pleasure: I'm ***Rei Kinkyū, Leader of the Nursing Club*** , pleased to meet you in person, Ryuko Matoi"

"Uh, yeah... likewise" Rei's energy really offset Ryuko, she wasn't half as cocky as all the other Two-Stars Club Leaders she had faced, her uniform was quite different too. Additionally, Ryuko didn't really want to fight today.

"So, what do you say, Scylla?"

Scylla took a moment to think about it and answered with a yes. Maybe by getting to know the rivals she can get a little bit more insight.

"Wonderful! You girls can come too!" Rei told the other two girls. Ryuko muttered something under her breath and Mako simply accepted for both of them. "Even better! We'll meet later today at the school entrance" A quick contact exchange with Scylla later, Rei was now ready to take her leave. "Now if you'll excuse, I gotta leave, like right now"

"Eh, why?" After Rei's quick show of friendliness, all three of them were a bit put off by her sudden urge to leave.

Just as Rei was about to say something.

"Yes, Rei, why are you leaving so soon?"

A looming presence appeared behind Rei, she seemed aware of him.

"Tadasuki" Ryuko said, aggressively as usual.

"Matoi" In contrast to his aura, his voice was quite calm.

"Eh, um, eh" Rei was trembling a bit, but her face didn't show it.

"\*Ahem\* Sorry for that" His aura became far more chill all of the sudden and Rei was also far more relaxed, as if she knew what happened.

"Ah, no worries Tadasuki, just planning on having some fun before the big trip"

"Very well, now go. I have work to do here"

"Here? at-" Rei was now speaking way differently than before, more easygoing, like when she talked with the girls.

"Leave"

"I, um, yes..."

Rei left quickly, looking back a couple of times before finally leaving sight.

"Is weird enough to have an upper-class come to visit the No-Star slums, so explain yourself Tadasuki" Ryuko recovered some of her energy, perhaps by pure instinct.

"Now, now, there's no reason to get violent here. Point being, I'm here for Shirogane"

"Eh? Me?!" She was secretly happy about it, or at least, she thought she hid it well.

"Wait A Minute Vice-Prez! :C" In a second mako was already in front of Tadasuki looking him directly in the eyes and pointing a finger at him.

"What is it, Mankashoku?" He was obviously uninterested in anything Mako had to say.

"What was with that letter?! I thought it was a love letter but nooo-"

Her ramble continued for a bit, with Tadasuki not moving an inch. And as Mako got closer, and louder, Tadasuki simply shut Mako's mouth with two of his fingers.

"Mhmh mhmh! MMMMMH! :!" Mako continued to shout while held by Tadasuki.

"Shirogane, we're going" He said as stoic as Gamagoori (But far less loud). "There's a couple of One-Stars students, they'll show you where to go"

"Uh, yes..." She didn't question one bit of anything he said, this got Ryuko even more uneasy.

/-

As a pair of One-Star students took Scylla and guided her to the Cableway, Matoi spoke.

"Mako, stop"

I let Mankanshoku go, she might not listen to me, but she does listen to Matoi

"Ah! :V" Like a balloon that had too much air, Mako flew and fell on Ryuko's arms, passing out as all the air on her lungs suddenly left her.

"I'm glad you're smart Ryuko Matoi"

"And I'm kinda mad you're too. So what is it? Came here to provoke or somethin?"

"Not at all, if anything, you might want to speak with Sa-ahem-Lady Satsuki. She'll be waiting for you tomorrow in the afternoon at the entrance of Honnouji Academy"

"You bastard. how did you kn-!"

"Call it... Experience"

An exchange of glares was all that was left and I took my leave from Mankashoku's place.

On my way back to the Cableway.

T: "(So That's Ryuko Matoi, Interesting)"

I: "(She's fun I think)"

T: "(Of course you'd say that)"

Finally in the cableway, I take a seat and give the One-Stars the signal to send us up. Scylla sitting on the opposite side, staying surprisingly quiet, fidgeting a bit, but quiet.

"We're here"

"Oh! Yes..."

The weird silence continued throughout our walk towards Honno Tower across all the rubble.

"What, the... I saw you guys fight Ryuko but... when did all of this-?"  
Scylla grew confused.

"Matoi is a fierce fighter"

"Did you-?"

"No"

I'm sure she read my mood and realized that I wanted to end the conversation right there and there. I'm positive she felt frustrated and even more confused, I'll speak more with her later... though what words should I use? It'll be difficult. Perhaps, it's time she knows more about Honnouji?



Making our way up a *couple* of, very broken, flights of stairs all the way up Honno tower, we finally arrived at the meeting room. But before going in...

"Shirogane, there's a couple of things you are to know when we go in, mainly that you are not to say a word unless Lady Satsuki or I allow you to, understood?"

"Ah, uh, wah! I... yes!" She jumped back into reality to hear the orders I just gave her, still confused as to why.

"We'll have plenty of time to talk once we're done here, so endure your questions for a bit longer" She's a young girl still, I owe a couple of answers at least.

"I... I will..." Her expression was quite grim but quickly changed to determined.

"Now prepare yourself, I will introduce you to the Elite four"

She forced a serious expression and we walked in.

"Ohoho, look who finally showed up, and with company nonetheless, hehehe"

"Nonsense, Jakuzure! Tadasuki is just in time as always!"

"Ugh, damn Froggie..."

Sanageyama and Inumuta said nothing as I waved my hand to tell Scylla to wait and bow to Satsuki, who was sitting on her chair with her back facing us. The smell and the steam of the tea cup were impossible to hide even if the room was a little darker than usual due to repairs.

"Tadasuki"

"Lady Satsuki"

"Proceed"

"Yes"

Everyone else in the room was a bit taken aback at the short exchange of words, as they are usually much longer and in detail.

"Scylla Shirogane, I will now introduce you to the Elite Four!"

The four jackasses in the room couldn't help but smirk a little, even Inumuta through his weird neck thingy...

"Disciplinary Committee Chair, ***Ira Gamagoori!*** "

"It is nice to have a proper introduction, Shirogane, cause no trouble to Honnouji and I'm sure we'll get along"

Scylla nodded and bowed slightly in Acknowledgement and I continued.

"Information And Strategy Committee Chair, ***Houka Inumuta!*** "

"I hope you allow us another scan, there is always more to unveil"  
He said as he fixed his glasses.

A little worried, Scylla replied the same way as she did with Gamagoori.

Sanageyama slowly got up. I was going to introduce Nonon, but patience isn't exactly Uzu's forte. Lunging forward with his sword in hand, he aimed at Scylla. I easily grabbed it as he got closer, we stared at each other for a couple of seconds, then...

"Athletic Committee Chair, ***Uzu Sanageyama*** "

"I've heard that you're strong, girl"

Scylla once again noddend and Bowed as Sanageyama sat back on the couch, but this time she was considerably concerned that what

happened was simply brushed off by everyone.

"Non-Athletic Committee Chair, **Nonon Jakuzure** "

"Don't pay much attention to the guys, they tend to be weirdos quite often, even the one beside you right now is no stranger to doing stupid stuff"

All the guys in the room were lost for words as if all were thinking "Touche", still it's not the first time Nonon does something like that and I'll be damned if it was the last one.

Once again Scylla bowed and was little less worried, all thanks to Nonon's comment that I'm positive was intentional in more than one way.

"Shirogane" Satsuki turned around.

"Yes!" Scylla answered immediately.

"Your job will be to aid *The Vice-President of Honnouji Academy Kai Tadasuki* on his current task, understood?"

"Yes!"

"Then, Student Council, I trust that your respective tasks will be completed with the utmost efficacy!"

"Of Course **Lady Satsuki** !" We all but Scylla shouted in acknowledgement.

After that we were all ordered to leave to our places and carry out our orders.

/-

"So she will be Mr. Lizard's little secretary, Hmm" Jakuzure spoke to nobody while skipping her way down a hallway full of rubble.

"I doubt that's just it, given her mysterious origin and power, Tadasuki has become her warden." Accustomed to Jakuzure's way of asking for things, Inumuta, just a little behind her, started to explain.

"Ugh, I know there's more than that you nerd! You don't know a girl's heart at all. Hmph!"

"Well, I would love to hear you lecture me about it but I have business to attend to with Shiro, Later!"

"Hey! Get back here! I'm not done talking to you!"

/-

"EH! Is that?!" Scylla took one look at the wall of papers and just started at it in disbelief.

"Yep, you do have some sort of appointment with Rei, no?"

"I uh, yes, but I don't think I'll make it..."

"We best get started then"

"Ugh..." She was already defeated.

Taking my seat I told her to put a pile on the desk and take the one that was already finished to the finished pile by where my bed was... this continued for the rest of the day.

"Living the life, huh?" I said out loud to start a conversation with her.

"Hehe, it reminds me of..." Her expression changed completely to melancholy "my old school..."

"You... wanna talk about it?"

"No"

"Very well, now I'll answer any questions you have" Changing the topic to a more recent one, she lifted her face back up.

"What exactly happened yesterday?"

I told her everything up to Matoi's fight with Sanageyama, then she jumped a bit. Like she remembered something.

"Nui Harime..."

"Don't tell me you know her?" Concerned, I prepared to press the emergency button below the desk, just in case she might go berserk like Matoi.

"No, I just hate her" She was visibly angry, quite curious.

I continued with what happened yesterday, telling her how Nui attacked her and I jumped in front. She blushed a bit and almost got rid of all the anger wrinkles on her forehead.

I can safely assume that Matoi said nothing to her about going berserk. I chose to tell her about that, that it was Nui the one that killed Ryuko's father.

"So that's why she was all gloomy this morning..."

"Blind Rage leads you to dark places... I believe that you can help her cheer up together with Mankashoku"

"... Yes!"

"Good, because it's almost time for you to meet with Rei, no?"

"Wh-wah- what?! it's already that time?!"

"Sure is"

"But there's still too much to do!"

"Either way, the rest of this stuff I can do on my own" That and I have to look over the plan for the 'Road Trip.'

"I-i Thank youuu!"

"Go girl and have fun" She was very helpful, more than expected, cutting my workload by half, maybe I'll have her help me with other stuff.

/-

On the front of Honnouji Grounds, the Woman with long pink-purplish hair waited for the Silver Haired girl.

"Oh, there you are!" Rei spotted an exhausted Scylla make her way through rubble and debris.

"Ah, Rei... how did you-?"

"Kai told me he let you go early, hehe" Playful as ever, Rei giggled. Scylla knows that Rei is far more than meets the eye." So, you're ready?"

"I uh, yes"

"Nice! Follow me!"

They walked to one side of the academy, then it entered sight.

"Wait is that-"

"Yep, Kai's bike. He never let me take it for a ride, but after the time he left Honno City in record time I don't think he can deny me a lap or two with this bad boy" The Smile in Rei's face worried Scylla a bit, she didn't exactly wanted to do more daredevil stunts.

"Hold on, you know how to drive this?"

"Of course, I'm a paramedic, I have to. Still, this thing is nowhere near as powerful as my own, maybe I'll show you all later" Rei's Devilish smile told Scylla that she *might* not get a choice about that.

"What about Ryuko and Mako?"

"They are already waiting for us at the place, now let's go!"

Both of them got on the bike, Scylla on the same spot as before, but this time there was far more space.

As soon as Scylla held to Rei's waist, Rei revved up the bike, faster than Kai had gone, her twintails getting all messy by the wind.

And in the blink of an eye, Honnouji Academy was barely out of sight, as many buildings from the district obscured the view to the outside.

"Wow, I've never been here before"

"Quite different from the slums right?"

Revving up, the lights from those buildings became lines even at this speed, Scylla noticed a big gate in front of them. But Rei wasn't stopping.

"Uh! Rei?"

"Hehehe!"

Scylla heard the *\*click\** of a button, expecting to see the gate open she opened her eyes. Only to find both of them something around Five Metters (Sixteen Feet) in the air.

"WAAAAAH!" Bracing for impact, this brought her memories, she couldn't make out whether they were good or bad ones though.

With the bike slamming into the road, Scylla's face was buried in Rei's long pink hair. It smelled really sweet, like sugar.

Wheels drifting and pulling an Akira, Rei finally stopped and Scylla opened her eyes for good this time.

"So, how was it?" Rei said, taking off her visor.

"I-I didn't know this thing was that fast" Scylla said while trembling, struggling to get down the bike.

"Of course you silly, Kai would never go this fast, not without reason at least"

"You know an awful lot about him..."

"Aw come on! We're not here to talk about that, not Yet if that makes you feel better"

"You- You're right..."

Rei knew exactly what was going on and how to handle it, but Scylla could not notice it.

"Lady Rei, I believe your parents asked you to not jump over the gate like that" An old man appeared on the front door, a butler.

"You have a butler?"

"Two-Stars get a bunch of stuff, but Yasunaga has helped my family since long before I joined Honnouji Academy"

"The guest have arrived, they are already waiting at the lobby"

"Thanks Yasunaga, and don't worry, my parents don't really care about that stuff"

"\*Sigh\* Very well"

A/N



Sup yall how you been? it's been a while hasn't it?... sorry.... stuff got... rough.

But please, allow me to thank you all not only for 10k reads, and 300 votes! also give it up for the 1 year anniversary! I made a lil something to celebrate (but i cant post pics here godamit!)

Everyday, seeing the lil number go up made me smile, reading the nice and fun comments yall leave makes me want to keep working on it, even if i cant cuz you know, stuff. but I do read them all and I appreciate the support. Please continue to like my work, I made sum half decent drawings for future parts that are coming soon(tm).

Now for something more technical, I like giving my thoughts on a ch/talk with yall about it, but I feel the intermissions add too many parts to the book, so i've decided to make another book where i'll post the afterwords and the pictures (if any) so that there's a place for them and don't have to go back to the ch. Does this sound okay for y'all? (Specially for those Not on WTP and don't worry the Fable's will stay here regardless)